

1162 a 43



T. Jolley Esq. F.S.A.

1162 a 43



T. Jolley Esq. F.S.A.

AN
EXTRACT
FROM
MILTON'S
PARADISE LOST.

With NOTES

L O N D O N:

PRINTED IN THE YEAR M,DCC,XCI.



44

7

4

268

T O T H E
R E A D E R.

OF all the Poems which have hitherto appeared in the World, in whatever Age or Nation, the Preference has generally been given, by impartial Judges, to *Milton's Paradise Lost*. But this inimitable Work, amidst all its beauties, is unintelligible to abundance of Readers: the immense learning which he has every where crowded together, making it quite obscure to persons of a common Education.

This difficulty, almost insuperable as it appears, I have endeavoured to remove in the following Extract: First, By omitting those lines, which I despaired of explaining to the unlearned, without using abundance of words: And, Secondly, by adding short and easy Notes, such as I trust will make the main of this excellent Poem, clear and intelligible to any uneducated Person, of a tolerably good Understanding.

To the R E A D E R.

To those Passages which I apprehend to be peculiarly excellent, either with regard to sentiment or expression, I have prefixed a Star: And these, I believe, it would be worth while to read over and over, or even to commit to Memory.

J O H N W E S L E Y.

London, January
1, 1763.



P A R A D I S E



PARADISE LOST.

B O O K I.

T H E A R G U M E N T.

This first book proposes first in brief, the whole subject, man's disobedience, and the loss thereupon of Paradise wherein he was placed: Then touches the prime cause of his fall, the Serpent, or rather Satan in the Serpent; who, revolting from God, and drawing to his side many legions of angels, was, by the command of God, driven out of heaven, with all his crew, into the great deep. Which action passed over, the poem hastens into the midst of things, presenting Satan, with his angels, now falling into hell, described here, not in the centre (for heaven and earth may be supposed as yet not made, certainly not yet accursed) but in a place of utter darkness, fitliest called chaos. Here Satan, with his angels, lying on the burning lake, thunder-struck and astonished, after a certain space recovers, as from confusion, calls up him who, next in order and dignity, lay by him; they confer of their miserable fall. Satan awakens all his legions, who lay till then in the same manner confounded: they rise; their numbers,

array of battle, their chief leaders named, according to the idols known afterwards in Canaan, and the countries adjoining. To these Satan directs his speech, comforts them with hope yet of regaining heaven, but tells them, lastly, of a new world, and new kind of creature to be created, according to an antient prophecy or report in heaven; for that angels were long before this visible creation, was the opinion of many antient fathers. To find out the truth of this prophecy, and what to determine thereon, he refers to a full council. What his associates thence attempt. Pandemonium, the palace of Satan, rises, suddenly built out of the deep; the infernal peers there sit in council.

OF man's first disobedience, and the fruit
 Of that forbidden tree, whose mortal taste
 Brought death into the world, and all our woe,
 With loss of Eden, till one greater man
 Restore us, and regain the blissful seat,
 Sing heav'nly muse. *O Spi'rit, that dost prefer
 Before all temples th' upright heart and pure,
 Instruct me, for thou know'st; thou from the first
 Wast present, and with mighty wings outspread
 Dove-like sat'st brooding on the vast abyss, 10
 And mad'st it pregnant: what in me is dark
 Illumine, what is low raise and support;
 That to the height of this great argument
 I may assert eternal providence,
 And justify the ways of God to men.* 15
 Say first, for heav'n hides nothing from thy view,
 Nor the deep tract of hell, say first what cause
 Mov'd our grand parents, in that happy state,
 Favour'd of heav'n so highly, to fall off
 From their Creator, and transgress his will, 20

For one restraint, lords of the world besides?
Who first seduced them to that foul revolt?
Th' infernal serpent; he it was, whose guile,
Stirr'd up with envy and revenge, deceiv'd
The mother of mankind, what time his pride 25
Had cast him out from heav'n, with all his host
Of rebel angels, by whose aid aspiring
To set himself in glory 'bove his peers,
He trusted to have equal'd the Most High,
If he oppos'd; and with ambitious aim 30
Against the throne and monarchy of God
Rais'd impious war in heav'n and battle proud
With vain attempt. Him th' almighty Power
Hurl'd headlong flaming from th' ethereal sky,
With hideous ruin and combustion, down 35
To bottomless perdition, there to dwell
In adamant chains and penal fire,
Who durst defy th' Omnipotent to arms.
* Nine times the space that measures day and night
To mortal men, he with his horrid crew 40
Lay vanquish'd, rolling in the fiery gulph
Confounded, though immortal: but his doom
Reserv'd him to more wrath; for now the thought
Both of lost Happiness and lasting pain
Torments him; round he throws his baleful eyes, 34
That witness'd huge affliction and dismay
Mix'd with obdurate pride and stedfast hate.
At once, as far as angels ken, he views
The dismal situation waste and wild;
A dungeon horrible on all sides round 50
As one great furnace flam'd, yet from those flames
No light, but rather darkness visible
Serv'd only to discover sights of woe,

Regions of sorrow, doleful shades, where peace
 And rest can never dwell, hope never comes 55
 That comes to all ; but torture without end
 Still urges, and a fiery deluge, fed
 With ever-burning sulphur unconsum'd :
 Such place eternal justice had prepar'd
 For those rebellious, here their pris'on ordain'd 60
 In utter darkness, and their portion set
 As far remov'd from God and light of heaven,
 As from the center thrice to th' utmost pole.
 O how unlike the place from whence they fell !
 There the companions of his fall, o'erwhelm'd 65
 With floods and whirlwinds of tempestuous fire,
 He soon discerns, and wett'ring by his side
 One next himself in pow'r, and next in crime,
 Beelzebub. To whom the arch-enemy,
 And thence in heav'n called Satan, with bold words 70
 Breaking the horrid silence, thus began.

* If thou art he ; but O how fall'n ! how chang'd
 From him, who in the happy realms of light
 Cloth'd with transcendent brightness didst outshine 75
 Myriads though bright ! If he, whom mutual league,
 United thoughts, and counsel's equal hope
 And hazard in the glorious enterprise,
 Join'd with me once, now misery hath join'd
 In equal ruin : into what pit thou feest 80
 From what height fall'n ; so much the stronger prov'd
 He with his thunder ; and till then who knew
 The force of these dire arms ? Yet not for those,
 Nor what the potent victor in his rage
 Can else inflict, do I repent or change, 85
 Though chang'd in outward lustre, that fix'd mind,
 And high disdain, from sense of injur'd merit,

That with the mightiest rais'd me to contend,
 And to the fierce contention brought along
 Innumerable force of spirits arm'd, 95
 That durst dislike his reign, and me preferring,
 His utmost pow'r with adverse pow'r oppos'd
 In dubious battle on the plains of heaven,
 And shook his throne. * What, though the field be lost!
 All is not lost; th' unconquerable will, 95
 And courage never to submit or yield,*
 That glory never shall his wrath or might
 Extort from me. To bow and sue for grace
 With suppliant knee, and deify his powery
 Who from the terror of this arm so late 100
 Doubted his empire; that were low indeed,
 That were an ignominy, and shame beneath
 This downfall. Since by fate the strength of Gods
 And this empyreal substance cannot fail,
 Since through experience of this great event 105
 In arms not worse, in foresight much advanc'd,
 We may with more successful hope resolve
 To wage by force or guile eternal war,
 Irreconcilable to our grand foe,
 Who now triumphs, and in th' excess of joy 110
 Sole reigning holds the tyranny of heaven.
 So spoke th' apostate angel, though in pain,
 Vaunting aloud, but rack'd with deep despair:
 And him thus answer'd soon his bold compeer.
 O Prince, O Chief of many throned Powers, 115
 That ledst th' imbattled Seraphim to war
 Under thy conduct, and in dreadful deeds
 Fearless, indanger'd heav'n's perpetual king,
 And put to proof his high supremacy,

Whether upheld by strength, or chance, or fate ; 120
 Too well I see and rue the dire event,
 That with sad overthrow and foul defeat
 Hath lost us heav'n, and all this mighty host
 In horrible destruction laid thus low,
 As far as gods and heav'nly essences 125
 Can perish : for the mind and spi'rit remain
 Invincible, and vigour soon returns,
 Through all our glory' extinct, and happy state
 Here swallow'd up in endless misery.
 * But what if he our conqu'ror (whom I now 130
 Of force believe almighty, since no less
 Than such could have o'er-pow'r'd such force as ours)
 Have left us this our spi'rit and strength entire
 Strongly to suffer and support our pains,
 That we may so suffice his vengeful ire, 135
 Or do him mightier service as his thralls
 By right of war, whate'er his business be,
 Here in the heart of hell to work in fire,
 Or do his errands in the gloomy deep ;
 What can it then avail, though yet we feel 140
 Strength undiminis'h'd, or eternal being
 To undergo eternal punishment ? *
 Whereto with speedy words th' arch-fiend reply'd.
 Fall'n Cherub, to be weak is miserable
 Doing or suffering : but of this be sure, 145
 To do ought good never will be our task,
 But ever to do ill our sole delight,
 As being the contrary to his high will,
 Whom we resist. If then his providence
 Out of our evil seek to bring forth good, 150
 Our labour must be to pervert that end,

Book I. PARADISE LOST.

14

And out of good still to find means of ill.

* But see the angry victor hath recall'd

His ministers of vengeance and pursuit

Back to the gates of heav'n: the sulphurous hail

155

Shot after us in storm, o'erblown hath laid

The fiery surge, that from the precipice

Of heav'n receiv'd us falling; and the thunder,

Wing'd with red lightning and impetuous rage,

Perhaps hath spent his shafts, and ceases now

160

To bellow through the vast and boundless deep.

Let us not slip th' occasion, whether scorn,

Or satiate fury yield it from our foe.

See'st thou yon dreary plain, forlorn and wild,

The seat of desolation, void of light,

165

Save what the glimmering of these livid flames

Casts pale and dreadful? Thither let us tend

From off the tossing of these fiery waves;

There rest, if any rest can harbour there, *

And re-assembling our afflicted powers,

170

Consult how we may henceforth most offend

Our enemy, our own loss how repair:

What reinforcement we may gain from hope;

If not, what resolution from despair.

* Thus Satan talking to his nearest mate

175

With head up-lift above the wave, and eyes

That sparkling blaz'd, his other parts besides

Prone on the flood, extended long and large

Lay floating many a rood: nor ever thence

Had ris'n or heav'd his head, but that the will

180

And high permission of all-ruling heaven

Lest him at large to his own dark designs,

* Forthwith upright he rears from off the pool

His mighty stature ; on each hand the flames
 Driv'n backward slope their pointed spires, and roll'd 185
 In billows, leave i'th' midst a horrid vale.
 Then with expanded wings he steers his flight
 Aloft, incumbent on the dusky air
 That felt unusual weight, 'till on dry land
 He lights, if it were land that ever burn'd 190
 With solid, as the lake with liquid fire.

Is this the region, this the soil, the clime,
 Said then the lost arch-angel, this the seat
 That we must change for heav'n, this mournful gloom
 For that celestial light ? Be it so, since he 195
 Who now is Sov'reign can dispose and bid
 What shall be right : farthest from him is best,
 Whom reas'on hath equal'd, force hath made supreme
 Above his equals. Farewel happy fields,
 Where joy for ever dwells : hail horrors, hail 200
 Infernal world, and thou profoundest hell
 Receive thy new possessor ; one who brings
 A mind not to be chang'd by place or time.
 The mind is its own place, and in itself
 Can make a heav'n of hell, a hell of heav'n, * 205
 What matter where, if I be still the same,
 And what I should be, all but less than he
 Whom thunder hath made greater ? Here at least
 We shall be free; th' Almighty hath not built
 Here for his envy, will not drive us hence : 210
 Here we may reign secure, and in my choice
 To reign is worth ambition, though in hell :
 Better to reign in hell, than serve in heaven.
 But wherefore let we then our faithful friends,
 Th' associates and copartners of our loss 215

I. Lie thus astonish'd on th' oblivious pool,
And call them not to share with us their part
185 In this unhappy mansion, or once more
With rallied arms to try what may be yet
Regain'd in heav'n, or what more lost in hell?

220

So Satan spake, and him Beelzebub
Thus answer'd. Leader of those armies bright,
Which but th' Omnipotent, none could have foil'd,
190 If once they hear that voice, their liveliest pledge
Of hope in fears and dangers, heard so oft
In worst extremes, and on the perilous edge
Of battle when it rag'd, in all assaults
Their surest signal, they will soon resume
195 New courage and revive, though now they lie
Groveling and prostrate on yon lake of fire,
As we erewhile, astounded and amaz'd,
No wonder, fall'n such a pernicious height.

225

230

* He scarce had ceas'd when the superior fiend
200 Was moving tow'ard the shore : his pond'rous shield,
Ethereal temper, massy, large and round
Behind him cast ; the broad circumference
Hung on his shoulders like the moon, whose orb
Through optic glass the Tuscan artist views.
205 His spear, to equal with the tallest pine
Hewn on Norwegian hills, were but a wand,
He walk'd with to support uneasy steps
240 Over the burning marle, (not like those steps
On heaven's azure,) and the torrid clime
Smote on him fore besides, vaulted with fire :
Nathless he so indur'd till on the beach
245 Of that inflamed sea he stood, and call'd

His legions, angel forms, who lay, intranc'd
Thick as autumnal leaves that strow the brooks
In Volombrosa, where th' Etrurian shades
High over-arch'd imbow'r : so thick bestrown 250
Abject and lost, lay these, covering the flood,
Under amazement of their hideous change.

* He call'd so loud, that all the hollow deep
Of hell resounded. Princes, Potentates,
Warriors, the flow'r of heav'n, once yours, now lost, 255
If such astonishment as this can seize
Eternal spi'rits ; or have ye chos'n this place
After the toil of battle to repose
Your wearied virtue, for the ease ye find
To slumber here, as in the vales of heaven ? 260
Or in this abject posture have ye sworn
To'adore the conqueror ? who now beholds
Cherub and Seraph rolling in the flood
With scatter'd arms and ensigns, till anon
His swift pursuers from heav'n gates discern 265
Th' advantage, and descending tread us down
Thus drooping, or with linked thunderbolts
Transfix us to the bottom of this gulf.
Awake, arise, or be for ever fall'n. *

They heard, and were abash'd, and up they sprung : 270
Nor did they not perceive the evil plight
In which they were, or the fierce pains not feel ;
Yet to their general's voice they soon obey'd
Innumerable. As when the potent rod
Of Amram's son, up call'd a pitchy cloud 275
Of locusts, warping on the eastern wind,
That o'er the realm of impious Pharaoh hung
Like night, and darken'd all the land of Nile :

So numberless were those bad angels seen
Hov'ring on wing under the cope of hell 289
'Twixt upper, nether, and surrounding fires ;
'Till at a signal giv'n, th' up-lifted spear
Of their great sultan waving to direct
Their course, in even ballance down they light
On the firm brimstone, and fill all the plain. 295
Forthwith from every squadron and each band
The heads and leaders thither haste where stood
Their great commander ; godlike shapes and forms
Excelling human, princely dignities,
And pow'rs that erst in heaven sat on thrones ;
Though of their names in heav'nly records now 290
Be no memorial, blotted out and ras'd
By their rebellion from the book of life.
Nor had they yet among the sons of Eve
Got them new names, till wand'ring o'er the earth, 295
Through God's high sufferance for the trial of man,
By falsities and lies the greatest part
Of mankind they corrupted to forsake
God their creator, and th' invisible
Glory of him that made them to transform 300
Oft to the image of a brute, adorn'd
With gay religions full of pomp and gold,
And devils to adore for deities :
Then were they known to men by various names,
And various idols through the heathen world. 305
Say, muse, their names then known, who first, who last,
Rous'd from the slumber, on that fiery couch,
At their great empe'ror's call, as next in worth
Came singly where he stood on the bare strand,

While the promiscuous croud stood yet aloof. 310
 The chief were those, who from the pit of hell
 Roaming to seek their prey on earth, durst fix
 Their seats long after next the seat of God,
 Their altars by his altar, gods ador'd
 Among the nations round, and durst abide 315
 Jehovah thund'ring out of Zion, thron'd
 Between the cherubim ; yea, often plac'd
 Within his sanctuary itself their shrines,
 Abominations ; and with cursed things
 His holy rites and solemn feasts profan'd.
 First Moloch, horrid king, besmear'd with blood
 Of human sacrifice, and parents' tears, 320
 Though for the noise of drums and timbrels loud
 Their children's cries unheard, that pass'd through fire
 To his grim idol. Him the Ammonite
 Worshippt in Rabba and her watry plain.
 Next Chemos, th' obscene dread of Moab's sons, 325
 Peor his other name, when he entic'd
 Israel in Sittim on their march from Nile
 To do him wanton rites, which cost them woe.
 With these came they, who from the bord'ring flood
 Of old Euphrates to the brook that parts 330
 Egypt from Syrian ground, had general names
 Of Baalim and Ashtaroth, those male,
 These feminine.* For spirits when they please
 Can either sex assume, or both ; so soft
 And uncompounded is their essence pure, 335
 Not ty'd or manacled with joint or limb,
 Nor founded on the brittle strength of bones,
 Like cumbrous flesh : but in what shape they choose
 Dilated or condens'd, bright or obscure,

Book I. PARADISE LOST.

17

Can execute their airy purposes

340

And works of love or enmity fulfil.*

For those the race of Israel oft forsook

Their living strength, and unfrequented left

His righteous altar, bowing lowly down

To bestial gods ; for which their heads as low

345

Bow'd down in battle, sunk before the spear

Of despicable foes. With these in troop

Came Astoreth, whom the Phœnicians call'd

Astarte, queen of heav'n, Thammuz came next,

Whose annual wound in Lebanon allur'd

350

The Syrian damsels to lament his fate

In amorous ditties all a summer's day,

While smooth Adonis from his native rock

Ran purple to the sea, suppos'd with blood

Of Thammuz yearly wounded. Next came one

355

Who mourn'd in earnest when the captive ark

Maim'd his brute image, head and hands lopt off.

Dagon his name, sea monster, upward man

And downward fish : yet had his temple high

Rear'd in Azotus, dreaded through the coast

360

Of Palestine, in Gath and Ascalon,

And Accaron and Gaza's frontier bounds.

Him follow'd Rimmon, whose delightful seat

Was fair Damascus, on the fertile banks

Of Abbana and Pharphar. Next appear'd

365

A crew who under names of old renown,

Osiris, Isis, Orus, and their train,

With monstrous shapes and sorceries abus'd

Fanatic Egypt and her priests, to seek

Their wand'ring gods disguis'd in brutish forms. 370

Belial came last, than whom a spi'rit more lewd
 Fell not from heaven, or more gross to love
 Vice for itself: to him no temple stood
 Or altar smoak'd; yet who more oft than he
 In temples and at altars, when the priest
 Turns atheist, as did Eli's sons, who fill'd
 With lust and violence the house of God?
 In courts and palaces he also reigns
 And in luxurious cities, where the noise
 Of riot ascends above their loftiest towers,
 And injury and outrage: and when night
 Darkens the streets, then wander forth the sons
 Of Belial, flown with insolence and wine.

All these and more came flocking; but with looks
 Down cast and damp, yet such wherein appear'd
 Obscure some glimpse of joy, to' have found their chief
 Not in despair, to' have found themselves not lost
 In loss itself; which on his countenance cast
 Like doubtful hue: but he his wonted pride
 Soon recollecting, with high words, that bore
 Semblance of worth not substance, gently rais'd
 Their fainting courage, and dispell'd their fears.
 Then strait commands that at the warlike sound
 Of trumpets loud and clarions be uprear'd
 His mighty standard: that proud honour claim'd
 Azazel as his right, a cherub tall;
 Who forthwith from the glittering staff unsurl'd
 Th' imperial ensign, which full high advanc'd
 Shone like a meteor streaming to the wind,
 Seraphic arms and trophies; all the while
 Sonorous metal blowing martial sounds:

At which the universal host up sent
A shout, that tore hell's concave, and beyond
Frighted the reign of Chaos and old Night.
All in a moment through the gloom were seen 405
Ten thousand banners rising, to the air
With orient colours waving: with them rose
A forest huge of spears; and thronging helms
Appear'd and ferr'd shields in thick array
Of depth immeasurable: anon they move 410
* To flutes and soft recorders; such as rais'd
To height of noblest tempers heroes old
Arming to battle, and instead of rage
Deliberate valour breath'd, firm and unmov'd
With dread of death to flight or foul retreat; 415
Nor wanting pow'r to mitigate and swage
With solemn touches troubled thoughts, and chase
Anguish, and doubt, and fear, and sorrow, and pain,
From mortal or immortal minds. * Thus they
Breathing united force with fixed thought, 420
Mov'd on in silence to soft pipes, that charm'd
Their painful steps o'er the burnt soil; and now
Advanc'd in view they stand, a horrid front
Of dreadful length and dazzling arms, in guise
Of warriors old with order'd spear and shield, 425
Awaiting what command their mighty chief
Had to impose: he through the armed files
Darts his experienc'd eye, and soon traverse
The whole battalion, views their order due,
Their visages and stature as of gods, 430
Their number last he sums. And now his heart
Distends with pride, and hard'ning in his strength
Glories: for never since created man,

Met such imbodied force. These far beyond
Compare of mortal prowess, yet observ'd 435
Their dread commander :* he above the rest
In shape and gesture proudly eminent
Stood like a tow'r; his form had yet not lost
All her original brightness, nor appear'd
Less than arch-angel ruin'd, and th' excess 440
Of glory' obscur'd. As when the sun new risen
Looks through the horizontal misty air
Shorn of his beams, or from behind the moon
In dim eclipse disastrous twilight sheds
On half the nations, and with fear of change 445
Perplexes monarchs. Darken'd so, yet shone
Above them all th' archangel : but his face
Deep scars of thunder had entrench'd, and care
Sat on his faded cheek, but under brows
Of dauntless courage, and considerate pride 450
Waiting revenge : cruel his eye, but cast
Signs of remorse and passion, to behold
The fellows of his crime, the followers rather
(Far other once beheld in bliss) condemn'd
For ever now to have their lot in pain, 455
Millions of spirits for his fault amerc'd
Of heav'n, and from ethereal splendors flung
For his revolt, yet faithful how they stood,
Their glory wither'd : as when heaven's fire
Hath scath'd the forest oaks, or mountain pines, 460
With singed top their stately growth though bare
Stands on the blasted heath. He now prepar'd
To speak ; whereat their doubled ranks they bend
From wing to wing, and half inclose him round
With all his peers : attention held them mute. 465

Thrice he essay'd, and thrice, in spite of scorn,
Tears, such as angels weep, burst forth : at last
Words interwove with sighs found out their way.*

O Myriads of immortal spi'rits, O powers
Matchless, but with th' Almighty, and that strife 470

Was not inglorious, though th' event was dire,
As this place testifies, and this dire change
Hateful to utter : but what pow'r of mind
Foreseeing or presaging, from the depth
Of knowledge past or present, could have fear'd, 475

How such united force of gods, how such
As stood like these, could ever know repulse ?

For me be witness all the host of heaven,
If counsels different, or danger shunn'd
By me, have lost our hopes. But he who reigns 480

Monarch in heav'n, till then as one secure,
Sat on his throne, upheld by old repute,
Consent or custom, and his regal state
Put forth at full, but still his strength conceal'd.

Henceforth his might we know, and know our own, 485
So as not either to provoke, or dread

New war, provok'd ; our better part remains
To work by guile, what force effected not :

That he at length may find, who overcomes
By force, hath overcome but half his foe.

Space may produce new worlds ; whereof so rise
There went a fame in heav'n that he ere long 490

Intended to create, and therein plant

A generation, whom his choice regard
Should favour equal to the sons of heaven :

Thither, if but to pry, shall be perhaps
Our first eruption, thither or elsewhere: 495

For this infernal pit shall never hold
 Celestial spi'rits in bondage, nor th' abyss
 Long under darkness cover. But these thoughts
 Full counsel must mature : peace is despair'd,
 For who can think submission ? War then, war 500
 Open or understood must be resolv'd.

* He spake : and to confirm his words, out-flew
 Millions of flaming swords, drawn from the thighs
 Of mighty Cherubim : the sudden blaze
 Far round illumin'd hell : highly they rag'd 505
 Against the high'est, and fierce with grasped arms
 Clash'd on their sounding shields the din of war,
 Hurling defiance to'ward the vault of heaven.*

There stood a hill not far, whose grisly top
 Belch'd fire and rolling smoke ; the rest entire 510
 Shone with a glossy scurf, undoubted sign
 That in his womb was hid metallic ore,
 The work of sulphur. Thither wing'd with speed
 A numerous brigade hasten'd : Mammon led,
 Mammon, the least erected spi'rit that fell 515
 From heav'n, for e'en in heav'n his looks and thoughts
 Were always downward bent, admiring more
 The riches of heav'n's pavement, trodden gold,
 Than ought divine or holy else enjoy'd
 In vision beatific. By him first 520
 Men also, and by his suggestion taught,
 Ransack'd the center, and with impious hands
 Rifled the bowels of their mother earth
 For treasures better hid. Soon had his crew
 Open'd into the hill a spacious wound, 525
 And digg'd out ribs of gold. Let none admire
 That riches grow in hell ; that soil may best

k 1.

500

505

510

515

520

525

Deserve the precious bane. In many cells
That underneath had veins of liquid fire
Bluc'd from the lake, a second multitude 530

With wondrous art founded the massy ore,
Severing each kind, and scumm'd the bullion dross:

A third as soon had form'd within the ground
A various mold, and from the boiling cells
By strange conveyance fill'd each hollow nook. 535

Anon out of the earth a fabric huge
Rose like an exhalation, with the sound
Of dulcet symphonies and voices sweet,

Built like a temple. The ascending pile
Stood fix'd her stately height, and straight the doors 540

Opening their brazen folds discover wide
Within, her ample spaces, o'er the smooth

And level pavement : from the arched roof
Pendent by subtle magic many a row

Of starry lamps and cressets yielded light 545
As from a sky. The hasty multitude

Admiring enter'd, and the work some praise
And some the architect ; his hand was known

In heav'n by many a towred structure high.
Mean while the winged heralds by command 550

Of sov'reign pow'r, throughout the host proclaim
A solemn council forthwith to be held

At Pandemonium, the high capital
Of Satan and his peers : their summons call'd 555

From every band and squared regiment
By place or choice the worthies ; they anon

With hundreds and with thousands trooping came
Attended : all access was throng'd, the gates

And porches wide, but chief the spacious hall

Thick swarm'd, both on the ground and in the air: 560
 Behold a wonder! They but now who seem'd
 In bigness to surpass earth's giant sons,
 Now less than smallest dwarfs, in narrow room,
 Throng numberless. Thus spi'rits to smallest forms
 Reduc'd their shapes immense, and were at large 565
 Though without number still amidst the hall
 Of that infernal court. But far within,
 And in their own dimensions like themselves,
 The great Seraphic lords and Cherubim
 In close recess and secret conclave sat, 570
 A thousand demi-gods on golden seats,
 Frequent and full. After short silence then
 And summons read, the great consult began.



Notes ON PARADISE LOST.

B O O K I.

Verse 4. *With loss of Eden*.—That is, of Paradise, which was in *Eden*.

Ver. 10. *Dove-like satst brooding*.—This is the proper meaning of the word, which is translated *moved*, Gen. i. 2.

Ver. 11. *Pregnant*.—A pregnant Woman is, one big with child.

Ver. 12. *Illumine*.—Enlighten.

- Ver. 28. *Above his Peers*—His fellow Angels, even to be equal with God.
- Ver. 31. *Monarchy*, is Government by one.
- Ver. 34. *Th' ethereal Sky*—The highest Heaven.
- Ver. 36. *Ruin*—Falling with Violence. *Combustion*,
Burning in a dreadful manner.
- Ver. 37. *Penal*—Punishing.
- Ver. 39. *Adamantine*—Firm like Diamond.
- Ver. 45. *Baleful*—Full of Woe or Mischief.
- Ver. 48. *Ken*—See, discern.
- Ver. 52. *Darkness visible*—A dark Gloom.
- Ver. 63. *From the Center of the Earth to the outermost point of it*.
- Ver. 67. *Weltring*—Lying helpless.
- Ver. 69. *Beelzebub*.—Our Lord terms him, *Prince of the Devils*: Therefore probably next to *Satan*.
- Ver. 70. *Satan* signifies an Enemy.
- Ver. 76. A *Myriad* is ten thousand.
- Ver. 99. *Deify his Power*.—Own it to be divine.
- Ver. 104. *Empyrean*—Fiery. *Psalms* civ. 4.
- Ver. 114. *Compeer*.—Equal and Companion.
- Ver. 116, *Seraphim*.—The highest Order of Angels.
- Ver. 118. *Heavens perpetual King*.—So he terms him, not Eternal: Endeavouring to detract as much as possible from his everlasting Dominion, as if He had only reigned from Time immemorial.
- Ver. 121. *Rue*—Regret, grieve for.
- Ver. 125. *Essences*. Natures.
- Ver. 135. *Ire*—Anger,
- Ver. 136. *Thralls*—Slaves.
- Ver. 144. *Cherubim* are the second Order of Angels.
- Ver. 144. *To be weak is miserable*.—Is misery.

- Ver. 154. *His Ministers of Vengeance*.—To veil his Shame, Satan ascribes his Fall to the whole Host of Angels: But *Raphael*, Book VI. to the Messiah alone. Ver. 157. the Surge is the Swelling of the Sea.
- Ver. 163. *Satiate*.—Satisfied.
- Ver. 164. *Dreary*.—Dismal. Ver. 166. *Livid*.—Bluish.
- Ver. 181. A rood is two hundred and twenty Yards.
- Ver. 187. *Expanded*.—Stretched out.
- Ver. 188. *Incumbent*.—Leaning on.
- Ver. 205. *Can make a Heaven of Hell*.—This is a fit Rant for a Stoic or a Devil.
- Ver. 206. *All but less*.—Only less.
- Ver. 210. *Here*.—That is, This Place.
- Ver. 216. *Oblivious*.—Where they forget all things.
- Ver. 231. *Astounded*.—Astonished.
- Ver. 231. *Pernicious*.—Immense: hurtful.
- Ver. 235. *Ethereal*.—Heavenly.
- Ver. 238. *Through optic glafs*.—Through a telescope.
- Ver. 238. *The Tuscan Artist-Galileo*, a Native of *Tuscany*.
- Ver. 242. *Marle Soil*; *Marle* is a kind of Clay.
- Ver. 243. *The Torrid Clime*.—The scorching Climate.
- Ver. 245. *Nathless*.—Nevertheless.
- Ver. 249. *Valombrosa*.—That is a shady Valley, A Valley in *Tuscany*, formerly called *Hetruria*.
- Ver. 274. *Amram's Son*.—Moses.
- Ver. 276. *Warping*.—Working themselves forward, A Sea-term.
- Ver. 278. *The land of Nile*.—Egypt, watered by the River.
- Ver. 290. *Erst*.—Formerly.
- Ver. 297. *By falsities and lies*.—By false Idols, belying the true God.

- Ver. 302. *Religions*.—Religious Rites. Ver. 318. *Shrines*,
Altars.
- Ver. 322. *First Moloch*.—After Satan and Beelzebub.
Moloch signifies King.
- Ver. 325 *Chemos*, *Baalpeor* and *Priapus* were the same,
the Idol of Obscenity, worshipped with all manner of
Lewdness.
- Ver. 330. *Old Euphrates*. Mentioned by the Oldest
Historian, in the Earliest Account of Time: It was the
Eastern Boundary of Canaan.
- Ver. 330. *The Brook*.—The River Silor.
- Ver. 339. *Dilated or Condensed*.—Taking up more or less
room.
- Ver. 347. *With these in troop came* Astoreth—The Moon,
worshipped by the *Phœnicians*, with the Stars.
- Ver. 349. *Thammuz came next*—*Thammuz*, or *Adonis*, was
the God of the *Sidonians*, slain by a wild Boar in Mount
Lebanon, from which the River *Adonis* descends. At a
certain Season of the Year, about the Feast of *Adonis*, this
is of a bloody Colour, occasioned by a Sort of Minium or
red Earth, which the Rains wash into it. The Women
then made loud Lamentations for *Adonis*, supposing it
was discoloured with his blood.
- Ver. 360. *Azotus*, or *Ashdod*, *Gath* &c. were the five
Cities of the *Philistines*.
- Ver. 369. *Fanatic*.—Mad, void of understanding. *Orus*
was said to be the Son of *Osiris* and *Isis*. They worship-
ped them in the form of Bulls, Dogs and Cats.
- Ver. 383. *Flown*.—Overflown, flushed.
- Ver. 391. *Semblance*—Appearance.
- Ver. 394. *Clarions* are a kind of small, shrill Trumpet.

- Ver. 399. *A Meteor*.—Is a Vapour kindled in the Air.
- Ver. 401. *Sonorous*.—Sounding. *Martial*, Warlike.
- Ver. 404. *Chaos*.—Darkness and Emptiness, beautifully represented as a Person.
- Ver. 409. *Serried*.—Closely joined, locked one within another.
- Ver. 416. *Mitigate*.—To Ease.
- Ver. 424. *In guise*.—In the manner of.
- Ver. 428. *Traverse*.—Transversely, crossways.
- Ver. 432. *Distends*.—Swells.
- Ver. 435. *Prowess*.—Courage.
- Ver. 442. *Horizontal*.—Near the Horizon; the Line where the Sky and Earth seem to meet.
- Ver. 443. *Shorn*.—Stript of.
- Ver. 456. *Amerced of Heaven*.—Punished with the loss of it.
- Ver. 457. *Splendors*.—Brightness; glories.
- Ver. 460. *Scathed*.—Struck, hurt, scorched.
- Ver. 488. *Regal*.—Royal.
- Ver. 494. *Rife*.—Frequent.
- Ver. 500. *Eruption*.—Sally, Journey outward.
- Ver. 504. *Mature*.—Ripen, bring to perfection.
- Ver. 506. *Understood*.—Covertly carried on.
- Ver. 509. *Cherubim*.—Angels.
- Ver. 512. *Din*.—noise.
- Ver. 517. *Ore*.—Unwrought Metal.
- Ver. 518. *The Work of Sulphur*.—Quicksilver and Sulphur, are supposed to be the Principles of all Metals.
- Ver. 519. *A Brigade* is properly a Party of Soldiers.
- Ver. 520. *The least Erected*.—The lowest, basest.
- Ver. 525. *Vision beatific*.—The Sight of God which makes the essential Happiness of Heaven.

Ver. 536. *Founded*—Melted, and poured out.

Ver. 537. *The bullion dross*.—That which arose from the boiling Metal.

Ver. 542. *An Exhalation*—A vapour.

Ver. 543. *Dulcet*.—Pleasant.

Ver. 549. *Cressets*.—A Cresset is a Vessel to contain Oil.

Ver. 558. *Pandemonium*.—That is, the Palace of all the Devils.

Ver. 575. *Recess*.—Retirement, a *Conclave* is, a close room, or a company met therein.

Ver. 576. *Demigods*.—Little Gods.



PARADISE LOST.

BOOK II.

THE ARGUMENT.

The consultation begun, Satan debates whether another battle is to be hazarded for the recovery of heaven: some advise it, others dissuade: A third proposal is preferred, mentioned before by Satan, to search the truth of that prophecy or tradition in heaven concerning another world, and another kind of creature equal or not much inferior to themselves, about this time to be created; their doubt who shall be sent on this difficult search: Satan their chief undertakes alone the voyage, is honoured and applauded. The council thus ended, the rest betake themselves several ways, and to several employments, as their inclinations lead them, to entertain the time till Satan return. He passes on his journey to hell gates, finds them shut, and who sat there to guard them, by whom at length they are opened, and discover to him the great gulf between hell and heaven; with what difficulty he passes through, directed by Chaos, the power of that place, to the sight of this new world which he sought.

HIGH on a throne, Satan exalted sat,
 And high uplifted beyond hope, aspires
 Beyond thus high, insatiate to pursue
 Vain war with heav'n, and by success untaught

His proud imaginations thus display'd.

Pow'rs and dominions, deities of heaven,
 For since no deep within her gulph can hold
 Immortal vigor, though oppress'd and fall'n,
 I give not heav'n for lost. From this descent
 Celestial virtues rising, will appear 10
 More glorious and more dread than from no fall.
 Me though just right, and the fix'd laws of heaven,
 Did first create your leader, next free choice,
 With what besides, in counsel or in fight,
 Hath been achiev'd of merit, yet this loss 15
 Thus far at least recover'd, hath much more
 Establish'd in a safe unenvied throne
 Yielded with full consent. The happier state
 In heav'n, which follows dignity, might draw
 Envy from each inferior; but who here 20
 Will envy whom the highest place exposes
 Foremost to stand against the thund'rer's aim
 Your bulwark, and condemns to greatest share
 Of endless pain? Where there is then no good
 For which to strive, no strife can grow up there 25
 From faction; for none sure will claim in hell
 Precedence, none, whose portion is so small
 Of present pain, that with ambitious mind
 Will covet more. With this advantage then
 To union, and firm faith, and firm accord, 30
 More than can be in heav'n, we now return
 To claim our just inheritance of old,
 Whether by open war or covert guile,
 We now debate; who can advise, may speak.

He ceas'd; and next him Moloch, scepter'd king, 35
 Stood up, the strongest and the fiercest spirit

That fought in heav'n, now fiercer by despair :
 His trust was with th' Eternal to be deem'd
 Equal in strength, and rather than be less
 Car'd not to be at all ; with that care lost
 Went all his fear : of God, or hell, or worse
 He reck'd not, and these words thereafter spake.

My sentence is for open war : of wiles,
 More unexpert, I boast not : them let those
 Contrive who need, or when they need, not now.
 For while they sit contriving, shall the rest,
 Millions that stand in arms, and longing wait
 The signal to ascend, sit ling'ring here
 Heav'n's fugitives, and for their dwelling place
 Accept this dark opprobrious den of shame,
 The prison of his tyranny who reigns
 By our delay ? No, let us rather choose,
 Arm'd with hell flames and fury all at once
 O'er heav'n's high tow'rs to force resistless way,
 Turning our tortures into horrid arms
 Against the torturer ; when to meet the noise
 Of his almighty engine he shall hear
 Infernal thunder, and for lightning see
 Black fire and horror shot with equal rage
 Among his angels, and his throne itself
 Mix'd with Tartarean sulphur, and strange fire,
 His own invented torments. But perhaps
 Th' event is feared : should we again provoke
 Our stronger, some worse way his wrath may find
 To our destruction ; if there be in hell
 Fear to be worse destroy'd : * What can be worse
 Than to dwell here, driv'n out from bliss, condemn'd
 In this abhorred deep to utter woe ;

40

45

50

55

60

65

Book II. PARADISE LOST. 33

Where pain of unextinguishable fire
Must exercise us without hope of end, 70

The vassals of his anger, when the scourge
Inexorably, and the torturing hour

Calls us to penance? More destroy'd than thus
We should be quite abolish'd and expire.

What fear we then? What doubt we to incense
His utmost ire? Which to the height enrag'd 75

Will either quite consume us, and reduce
To nothing this essential, happier far

Than miserable to have eternal being: *
Or if our substance be indeed divine, 89

And cannot cease to be, we are at worst
On this side nothing; and by reproof we feel

Our power sufficient to disturb his heaven,
And with perpetual inroads to alarm,

Though inaccessible, his fatal throne: 85
Which if not victory is yet revenge.

* He ended frowning, and his look denounc'd
Desp'rate revenge, and battle dangerous

To less than Gods. On th' other side up rose
Belial, in act more graceful and humane; 90

A fairer person lost not heav'n; he seem'd
For dignity compos'd and high exploit:

But all was false and hollow; though his tongue
Dropt Manna, and could make the worse appear

The better reason, to perplex and dash
Maturest counsels: for his thoughts were low; 95

To vice industrious, but to nobler deeds
Timorous and slothful: yet he pleas'd the ear,

And with persuasive accent thus began.*
I should be much for open war, O peers, 100

As not behind in hate ; if what was urg'd
 Main reason to persuade immediate war,
 Did not dissuade me most, and seem to cast
 Ominous conjecture on the whole success :
 When he who most excels in facts of arms,
 In what he counsels and in what excels
 Mistrustful, grounds his courage on despair
 And utter dissolution, as the scope
 Of all his aim, - after some dire revenge.
 First, what revenge ? The Tow'rs of heav'n are fill'd
 With armed watch, that render all access
 Impregnable. Oft on the bord'ring deep
 Incamp their legions, or with obscure wing
 Scout far and wide into the realm of night,
 Scorning surprise. Or could we break our way
 By force, and at our heels all hell should rise
 With blackest insurrection, to confound
 Heav'n's purest light, yet our great enemy
 All incorruptible would on his throne
 Sit unpo'lluted, and th' ethereal mould
 Incapable of stain would soon expel
 Her mischief, and purge off the baser fire
 Victorious. Thus repuls'd our final hope
 Is flat despair : we must exasperate
 Th' almighty victor to spend all his rage
 * And that must end us, that must be our cure,
 To be no more ! Sad cure ; for who would lose,
 Though full of pain, this intellectual being,
 These thoughts that wander through eternity,
 To perish rather, swallow'd up and lost
 In the wide womb of uncreated night,
 Devoid of sense and motion ? * And who knows,

Let th
 Can g
 Is dou
 Will h
 Belike
 To giv
 Them
 To pun
 Say the
 Reserv
 Whate
 What c
 Thus si
 What v
 With h
 The dee
 A refug
 Chain'd
 * What
 Awak'd
 And plu
 Should i
 His red
 Her store
 Of hell f
 Impende
 One day
 Designin
 Caught i
 Each on
 Of rackin
 Under yo

Let this be good, whether our angry foe
 Can give it, or will ever? How he can
 Is doubtful; that he never will is sure. 135
 Will he, so wise, let loose at once his ire,
 10 Belike through impotence, or unaware,
 To give his enemies their wish, and end
 Them in his anger, whom his anger saves
 To punish endless? Wherefore cease we then 140
 Say they who counsel war, we are decreed,
 Reserv'd and destin'd to eternal woe;
 11 Whatever doing, what can we suffer more,
 What can we suffer worse? Is this then worst,
 Thus sitting, thus consulting, thus in arms? 145
 What when we fled amain, pursued and struck
 With heav'n's afflicting thunder, and besought
 12 The deep to shelter us? This hell then seem'd
 A refuge from those wounds: or when we lay
 Chain'd on the burning lake? That sure was worse 150
 * What if the breath that kindled those grim fires
 Awak'd should blow them into sev'nfold rage,
 13 And plunge us in the flames? Or from above
 Should intermitted vengeance arm again
 His red right hand to plague us? What if all 155
 Her stores were open'd, and this firmament
 Of hell should spout her cataracts of fire,
 14 Independent horrors, threatening hideous fall
 One day upon our heads; while we perhaps
 Designing or exhorting glorious war, 160
 Caught in a fiery tempest shall be hurl'd
 Each on his rock transfix'd, the sport and prey
 23 Of racking whirlwinds, or for ever sunk
 Under yon boiling ocean, wrapt in chains;

There to converse with everlasting groans,
Unrespited, unpitied, unpriv'd,
Ages of hopeless end ? This would be worse.*
War therefore, open or conceal'd alike
My voice dissuades ; for what can force or guile
With him, or who deceive his mind, whose eye
Views all things at one view ? He from heav'n's height
All these our motions vain sees and derides ;
Not more almighty to resist our might
Than wise to frustrate all our plots and wiles.
Shall we then live thus vile, the race of heaven
Thus trampled, thus expell'd to suffer here
Chains and these torments ? Better these than worse
By my advice ; since fate inevitable
Subdues us, and omnipotent decrees,
The victor's will. To suffer, as to do,
Our strength is equal, nor the law unjust
That so ordains : this was at first resolv'd,
If we were wise, against so great a foe
Contending, and so doubtful what might fall.
Our supreme foe in time may much remit
His anger, and perhaps thus far remov'd
Not mind us not offending, satisfy'd
With what is punish'd ; whence these raging fires
Will slacken, if his breath stir not their flames.
Our purer essence then will overcome
This noxious vapour, or inur'd not feel,
Or chang'd at length, and to the place conform'd
In temper and in nature, will receive
Familiar the fierce heat, and void of pain.
Besides what hope the never-ending flight
Of future days may bring, what chance, what change

165 Worth waiting, since our present lot appears
For happy though but ill, for ill not worst,
If we procure not to ourselves more woe.

Thus Belial with words cloth'd in reason's garb 200
Counsel'd ignoble ease, and peaceful sloth,
Not peace: and after him thus Mammon spake.

170 Either to disenthroned the king of heaven
We war, if war be best, or to regain
Our own right lost: him to unthroned we then 205

May hope, when everlasting fate shall yield
To fickle chance, and Chaos judge the strife.

175 The former vain to hope argues as vain
The latter: for what place can be for us
Within heav'n's bound, unless heav'n's Lord supreme 210

We overpower? Suppose he should relent,
And publish grace to all, on promise made
Of new subjection; with what eyes could we
Stand in his presence humble, and receive
Strict laws impos'd, to celebrate his throne 215

With warbled hymns, and to his Godhead sing
Forc'd Hallelujah's while he lordly sits

180 Our envied sovereign, and his altar breathes
Ambrosial odors from ambrosial flowers,
Our servile offerings? This must be our task 220

In heaven, this our delight; how wearisome
Eternity so spent in worship paid

190 To whom we hate! Let us not then pursue
By force impossible, by leave obtain'd
Unacceptable, though in heav'n, our state 225

195 Of splendid vassalage; but rather seek
Our own good from ourselves, and from our own

Live to ourselves, though in this waste recess
 Free and to none accountable, preferring
 Hard liberty before the easy yoke

230

Of servile pomp Our greatness will appear
 Then most conspicuous, when great things of small,
 Useful of hurtful, prosp'rous of adverse
 We can create, and in what place so e'er
 Thrive under evil, and work ease out of pain

235

Through labour and endurance. * This deep world
 Of darkness do we dread? How oft amidst
 Thick clouds and dark doth heav'n's all-ruling Sire
 Choose to reside, his glory unobscur'd,
 And with the majesty of darkness round
 Covers his throne; from whence deep thunders roar
 Must'ring their rage, and heav'n resembles hell? *

240

As he our darkness, cannot we his light
 Imitate when we please? This desert soil
 Wants not her hidden lustre, gems and gold;
 Nor want we skill or art, from whence to raise
 Magnificence; and what can heav'n shew more?
 Our torments also may in length of time

245

Become our elements; these piercing fires
 As soft as now severe, our temper chang'd
 Into their temper; which must needs remove
 The sensible of pain. All things invite

250

To peaceful counsels, and the settled state
 Of order, how in safety best we may

Compose our present evils, with regard
 Of what we are and where, dismissing quite
 All thoughts of war: ye have what I advise.

255

* He scarce had finish'd, when such murmur fill'd
 Th' assembly, as when hollow rocks retain

Book II. P A R A D I S E L O S T. 39

The found of blust'ring winds, which all night long 260

Had rous'd the sea, now with hoarse cadence lull

Sea-faring men, o'erwatch'd, whose bark by chance

Or pinnace anchors in a craggy bay

After the tempest: such applause was heard

As Mammon ended, and his sentence pleas'd, 265

Advising peace : for such another field

They dreaded worse than hell : so much the fear

Of thunder and the sword of Michael

Wrought still within them : and no less desire

To found this nether empire, which might rise 270

By policy, and long process of time,

In emulation opposite to heaven.

* Which when Beelzebub perceiv'd, than whom,

Satan except, none higher sat, with grave

Aspect he rose, and in his rising seem'd 275

A pillar of state; deep on his front engraven

Deliberation sat and public care ;

And princely counsel in his face yet shone,

Majestic though in ruin : sage he stood

With Atlantean shoulders fit to bear 280

The weight of mightiest monarchies ; his look

Drew audience and attention still as night

Or summer's noon-tide air, while thus he spake.*

Thrones and imperial pow'rs, offspring of heaven,

Ethereal virtues, or these titles now 285

Must we renounce, and changing stile be call'd

Princes of hell ? For so the popular vote

Inclines, here to continue, and build up here

A growing empire ; doubtless ; while we dream,

And know not that the king of heav'n hath doom'd 290

Live to ourselves, though in this waste recess

Free and to none accountable, preferring

Hard liberty before the easy yoke

230

Offervile pomp Our greatness will appear

Then most conspicuous, when great things of small,

Useful of hurtful, prosp'rous of advetse

We can create, and in what place so e'er

Thrive under evil, and work ease out of pain

235

Through labour and indurance. * This deep world

Of darkness do we dread? How oft amidst

Thick clouds and dark doth heav'n's all-ruling Sire

Choose to reside, his glory unobscur'd,

And with the majesty of darkness round

240

Covers his throne; from whence deep thunders roar

Must ring their rage, and heav'n resembles hell? *

As he our darkness, cannot we his light

Imitate when we please? This desert soil

Wants not her hidden lustre, gems and gold;

245

Nor want we skill or art, from whence to raise

Magnificence; and what can heav'n shew more?

Our torments also may in length of time

Become our elements, these piercing fires

As soft as now severe, our temper chang'd

250

Into their temper; which must needs remove

The sensible of pain. All things invite

To peaceful counsels, and the settled state

Of order, how in safety best we may

Compose our present evils, with regard

255

Of what we are and where, dismissing quite

All thoughts of war: ye have what I advise.

* He scarce had finish'd, when such murmur fill'd

Th' assembly, as when hollow rocks retain

The sound of blust'ring winds, which all night long 260

Had rous'd the sea, now with hoarse cadence lull

230

Sea-faring men, o'erwatch'd, whose bark by chance

Or pinnace anchors in a craggy bay

After the tempest: such applause was heard

As Mammon ended, and his sentence pleas'd, 265

Advising peace: for such another field

235

They dreaded worse than hell: so much the fear

Of thunder and the sword of Michael

Wrought still within them: and no less desire

To found this nether empire, which might rise 270

By policy, and long process of time,

240

In emulation opposite to heaven.

* Which when Beelzebub perceiv'd, than whom,

Satan except, none higher sat, with grave

Aspect he rose, and in his rising seem'd 275

A pillar of state; deep on his front engraven

245

Deliberation sat and public care;

And princely counsel in his face yet shone,

Majestic though in ruin: sage he stood

With Atlantean shoulders fit to bear 280

The weight of mightiest monarchies; his look

250

Drew audience and attention still as night

Or summer's noon-tide air, while thus he spake.*

Thrones and imperial pow'rs, offspring of heaven,

Ethereal virtues, or these titles now 285

Must we renounce, and changing stile be call'd

255

Princes of hell? For so the popular vote

Inclines, here to continue, and build up here

A growing empire; doubtless; while we dream,

And know not that the king of heav'n hath doom'd 290

This place our dungeon, not our safe retreat
 Beyond his potent arm : for he, be sure,
 In height or deep, still first and last will reign
 Sole king, and of his kingdom lose no part.
 What fit we then projecting peace or war ? 295
 War hath determin'd us, and foil'd with loss
 Irreparable ; terms of peace yet none
 Vouchsaf'd or fought ; for what peace will be given
 To us enslav'd, but custody severe,
 And stripes, and arbitrary punishment 300
 Inflicted ? And what peace can we return,
 But to our pow'r hostility and hate,
 Untam'd reluctance, and revenge though slow,
 Yet ever plotting how the conqueror least
 May reap his conquest, and may least rejoice 305
 In doing what we most in suffering feel ?
 Nor will occasion want, nor shall we need
 With dang'rous expedition to invade
 Heav'n, whose high walls fear no assault or siege.
 What if we find some easier enterprise ? 310
 There is a place, (if antient fame in heaven
 Err not) another world, the happy seat
 Of some new race call'd man, about this time
 To be created like to us, though less
 In pow'r and excellence, but favour'd more
 Of him who rules above ; so was his will 315
 Pronounc'd among the Gods, and by an oath,
 That shook heav'n's whole circumference, confirm'd.
 Thither let us bend all our thoughts, to learn
 What creatures there inhabit, what their power,
 And where their weakness, how attempted best 320
 By force or subtlety. Though heav'n be shut

And heav'n's high arbitrator sit secure
 In his own strength, this place may lie expos'd,
 The utmost border of his kingdom, left
 To their defence who hold it : here perhaps 335
 Some advantageous act may be atchiev'd
 By sudden onset, either with hell fire
 To waste his whole creation, or possess
 All as our own, and drive, as we were driven,
 The puny habitants, or if not drive, 340
 Seduce them to our party, that their God
 May prove their foe, and with repenting hand
 Abolish his own works. This would surpass
 Common revenge, when these his darling sons,
 Hurl'd headlong to partake with us, shall curse 345
 Their frail original, and faded bliss,
 Faded so soon. Advise if this be worth
 Attempting, or to sit in darkness here
 Hatching vain empires. Thus Beelzebub
 Pleaded his devilish counsel, first devis'd 350
 By Satan, and in part propos'd : for whence
 But from the author of all ill, could spring
 So deep a malice, to confound the race
 Of mankind in one root ? The bold design
 Pleas'd highly those infernal states, and joy 355
 Sparkled in all their eyes : with full assent
 They vote : whereat his speech he thus renews.
 Well have ye judg'd, well ended long debate,
 Synod of gods, and like to what ye are,
 Great things resolv'd, which from the lowest deep 360
 Will once more lift us up, in spite of fate,
 Nearer our ancient seat ; perhaps in view

Of those bright confines, whence with neighb'ring arms
And opportune excursion we may chance
Re-enter heaven ; or else in some mild zone 355
Dwell not unvisited of heav'n's fair light
Secure, and at the brightning orient beam
Purge off this gloom ; the soft delicious air,
To heal the scar of these corrosive fires,
Shall breathe her balm. But first whom shall we send 360
In search of this new world ? Whom shall we find
Sufficient ? Who shall tempt with wand'ring feet
The dark unbottom'd infinite abyfs,
And through the palpable obscure find out
His uncouth way, or steer his aery flight 365
Upborne with indefatigable wings
Over the vast abrupt, ere he arrive
The happy isle ? What strength, what art can then
Suffice, or what evasion bear him safe
Through the strict senteries and stations thick 370
Of angels watching round ? Here he had need
All circumspection, and we now no less
Choice in our suffrage ; for on whom we send,
The weight of all and our last hopes relies.
This said, he sat ; and expectation held 375
His look suspense, awaiting who appear'd
To second, or oppose, or undertake
The perilous attempt : but all sat mute,
Pond'ring the danger with deep thoughts ; and each
In others count'nance read his own dismay 380
Astonish'd : none among the choice and prime
Of those heav'n-warring champions could be found
So hardy as to proffer or accept
Alone the dreadful voyage ; till at last

s

Satan, whom now transcendent glory rais'd 385

355

Above his fellows, with monarchal pride

Conscious of highest worth, unmov'd thus spake.

360

* O progeny of heav'n, empyreal thrones,

With reason hath deep silence and demur

Seiz'd us, though undismay'd : long is the way 390

And hard, that out of hell leads up to light ;

Our prison strong ; this huge convex of fire

Outrageous to devour, immures us round

Ninefold, and gates of burning adamant

Barr'd over us prohibit all egress.

395

365

These pass'd, if any pass, the void profound

Of unessential night receives him next

Wide gaping, and with utter loss of being

Threatens him, plung'd in that abortive gulf.

370

* If thence he scape into whatever world,

400

Or unknown region, what remains him less

Than unknown dangers, and as hard escape ?

But I should ill become this throne, O Peers,

And this imperial sov'reignty, adorn'd

With splendor, arm'd with power, if ought propos'd 405

And judg'd of public moment, in the shape

375

Of difficulty or danger could deter

Me from attempting. Wherefore do I assume

These royalties, and not refuse to reign,

Refusing to accept as great a share

410

Of hazard as of honour, due alike

380

To him who reigns, and so much to him due

Of hazard more, as he above the rest

High honour'd sits ? * Go therefore mighty powers,

Terror of heav'n, though fallen ; intend at home,

415

While here shall be our home, what best may ease

The present misery, and render hell
 More tolerable; if there be cure or charm
 To respite, or deceive, or slack the pain
 Of this ill mansion: intermit no watch 430
 Against a wakeful foe, while I abroad
 Through all the coasts of dark destruction seek
 Deliverance for us all: this enterprize
 None shall partake with me. Thus saying rose
 The monarch, and prevented all reply, 435
 Prudent left from his resolution rais'd
 Others among the chief might offer now
 (Certain to be refus'd) what erst they fear'd;
 And so refus'd might in opinion stand
 His rivals, winning cheap the high repute 430
 Which he through hazard huge must earn. But they
 Dreaded not more th' adventure than his voice
 Forbidding: and at once with him they rose;
 * Their rising all at once was as the sound
 Of thunder heard remote.* Towards him they bend 435
 With awful reverence prone; and as a God
 Extol him equal to the Highest in heaven:
 Nor fail'd they to express how much they prais'd,
 That for the general safety he despis'd
 His own: for neither do the spirits damn'd 440
 Lose all their virtue; lest bad men should boast
 Their specious deeds on earth, which glory excites,
 Or close ambition varnish'd o'er with zeal.
 Thus they their doubtful consultations dark
 Ended, rejoicing in their matchless chief:
 * As when from mountain tops the dusky clouds 445
 Ascending, while the north-wind sleeps, o'er-spread
 Heav'n's cheerful face, the lowering element

Scowls o'er the darken'd landskip snow, or shower:
If chance the radiant sun with farewell sweet 450

Extend his evening beam, the fields revive,
The birds their notes renew, and bleating herds
Attest their joy, that hill and valley rings.

O shame to men! Devil with devil damn'd
Firm concord holds; men only disagree 455

Of creatures rational, though under hope
Of heav'nly grace: and God proclaiming peace,
Yet live in hatred, enmity, and strife

Among themselves, and levy cruel wars,
Wasting the earth, each other to destroy!* 460

The Stygian council thus dissolv'd; and forth
In order came the grand infernal peers;
Midst came their mighty paramount, and seem'd

Alone the antagonist of heaven, nor less
Than hell's dread emperor with pomp supreme; 465

And God-like imitated state; him round
A globe of fiery seraphim inclos'd
With bright emblazonry, and horrent arms.

Then of their session ended they bid cry
With trumpets regal sound the great result: 470

Heard far and wide, and all the host of hell
With deafning shout return'd them loud acclaim.
Thence more at ease their minds, and somewhat rais'd

By false presumptuous hope, the ranged powers
Disband, and wand'ring, each his several way 475

Pursues, as inclination or sad choice
Leads him perplex'd, where he may likeliest find
Truce to his restless thoughts, and entertain

The irksome hours, till his great chief return.
Part on the plain, or in the air sublime, 480

Upon the wing, or in swift race contend,
Others with vast Typhoean rage more fell
Rend up both rocks and hills, and ride the air
In whirlwind: hell scarce holds the wild uproar.

* Others more mild, in silent valley, sing
With notes angelical to many a harp
Their own heroic deeds and hapless fall
By doom of battle; and complain that fate
Free virtue should enthral to force on chance.
Their song was partial, but the harmony
(What could it less when spirits immortal sing?)
Suspended hell, and took with ravishment
The thronging audience. In discourse more sweet
(For eloquence the soul, song charms the sense.)
Others apart sat on a hill retir'd,

In thoughts more elevate, and reason'd high
Of providence, foreknowledge, will, and fate,
Fix'd fate, free will, foreknowledge absolute,
And found no end, in wand'ring mazes lost.*
Of good and evil much they argued then,
Of happiness and final misery,
Vain wisdom all, and false philosophy:

* Yet with a pleasing forcery could charm
Pain for a while or anguish, and exite
Fallacious hope, or arm th' obdured breast
With stubborn patience as with triple steel.*
Another part in squadrons and gross bands,
On bold adventure to discover wide
That dismal world, if any clime perhaps
Might yield them easier habitation, bend
Four ways their flying march, along the banks
Of four infernal rivers, that disgorge

489

490

493

500

505

510

Into the burning lake their baleful streams;
 Abhorred Styx, the flood of deadly hate;
 Sad Acheron, of sorrow, black and deep;
 Cocytus, nam'd of lamentation loud
 Heard on the rueful stream; fierce Phlegethon,
 Whose waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.
 Beyond this flood a frozen continent
 Lies dark and wild, beat with perpetual storms
 Of whirlwind and dire hail, which on firm land
 Thaws not, but gathers heaps; the parching air
 Burns froze, and cold performs th' effect of fire.
 Thither by harpy-footed furies hal'd,
 At certain revolutions all the damn'd
 Are brought; and feel by turns the bitter change
 Of fierce extremes, extremes by change more fierce,
 From beds of raging fire to starve in ice
 Their soft ethereal warmth, and there to pine
 Immoveable, infix'd, and frozen round,
 Periods of time, thence hurried back to fire.
 Thus roving on forlorn, th' adventurous bands
 With shudd'ring horror pale, and eyes aghast,
 View'd first their lamentable lot, and found
 No rest: through many a dark and dreary vale
 They pass'd, and many a region dolorous,
 O'er many a frozen, many a fiery Alp,
 Rocks, caves, lakes, fens, bogs, dens, and shades of death,
 An universe of death, which God by curse
 Created evil, for evil only good,
 Where all life dies, death lives, and nature breeds,
 Perverse, all monstrous, all prodigious things,
 Abominable, inutterable, and worse
 Than fables yet have feign'd, or fear conceiv'd.*

515

520

525

530

535

540

* Mean while the adversary of God and man, 545
 Satan with thoughts inflam'd of high design,
 Puts on swift wings, and towards the gates of hell
 Explores his solitary flight ; sometimes
 He scours the right hand coast, sometimes the left,
 Now shaves with level wing the deep, then soars 550
 Up to the fiery concave towering high.
 At last appear Hell's bounds high to the roof,
 And thrice threefold the gates : three folds were bras,
 Three iron, three of adamantine rock,
 Impenetrable, impal'd with circling fire, 555
 Yet unconsum'd. Before the gates there sat
 On either side a formidable shape ;
 The one seem'd woman to the waste, and fair,
 But ended foul in many a scaly fold
 Voluminous and vast, a serpent arm'd 560
 With mortal sting : about her middle round
 A crew of hell hounds never ceasing rung
 A hideous peal ; yet, when they list, would creep,
 If ought disturb'd their noise, into her womb,
 Yet there still bark'd and howl'd. The other shape, 565
 If shape it might be call'd that shape had none
 Distinguishable in member, joint, or limb,
 Or substance might be call'd that shadow seem'd,
 For each seem'd either ; black it stood as night,
 And shook a dreadful dart : what seem'd his head 570
 The likeness of a kingly crown had on.
 Satan was now at hand, and from his seat
 The monster moving onward came as fast
 With horrid strides, hell trembled as he strode.*
 Th' undaunted fiend what this might be admir'd,
 Admir'd, not fear'd ; God and his Son except, 575

Created thing nought valued he nor shunn'd;
And with disdainful look thus first began.

Whence and what art thou, execrable shape,
That dar'st, though grim and terrible, advance
Thy miscreated front athwart my way

To yonder gates? Through them I mean to pass,
That be assur'd, without leave ask'd of thee:
Retire, or taste thy folly, and learn by proof,
Hell-born, not to contend with spirits of heaven.

To whom the goblin full of wrath reply'd.

Art thou that traitor angel, art thou he,
Who first broke peace in heav'n and faith, till then
Unbroken, and in proud rebellious arms

Drew after him the third part of heav'n's sons

Conjur'd against the Hig'hest, for which both thou

And they, outcast from God, are here condemn'd

To waste eternal days in woe and pain?

And reckon'st thou thyself with spirits of heaven,
Hell-doom'd, and breath'st defiance here and scorn,

Where I reign king, and to enrage thee more,

Thy king and lord? Back to thy punishment,

False fugitive, and to thy speed add wings,

Lest with a whip of scorpions I pursue

Thy lingring, or with one stroke of this dart

Strange horror seize thee, and pangs unselt before.

* So spake the grisly terror, and in shape,

So speaking and so threatening, grew tenfold

More dreadful and deform: on th' other side

Incens'd with indignation Satan stood

Unterrify'd. Mean time each at the head

Level'd his deadly aim; their fatal hands

No second stroke intend, and such a frown
 Each cast at th' other, as when two black clouds,
 With heav'n's artillery fraught, come rattling on; 610
 How'ring a space, till winds the signal blow
 To join their dark encounter in mid air:
 So frown'd the mighty combatants, that hell
 Grew darker at their frown, so match'd they stood;
 For never but once more was either like 615
 To meet so great a foe: * And now great deeds
 Had been achiev'd, whereof all hell had rung,
 Had not the snaky forcerers that sat
 Fast by hell gates, and kept the fatal key,
 Ris'n, and with hideous outcry rush'd between. 620

O father, what intends thy hand, she cry'd,
 Against thy only son? What fury, O son,
 Possesses thee to bend that mortal dart
 Against thy father's head? And know'st for whom;
 For him who sits above and laughs the while 625
 At thee ordain'd his drudge, to execute
 Whate'er his wrath, which he calls justice, bids:
 His wrath, which one day will destroy you both.

She spake, and at her words the hellish pest
 Forbore; then these to her Satan return'd. 630

So strange thy outcry, and thy words so strange
 Thou interposest, that my sudden hand
 Prevented spares to tell thee yet by deeds
 What it intends; till first I know of thee,
 What thing thou art, thus double-form'd, and why 635
 In this infernal vale first met thou call'st
 Me father, and that phantasm call'st my son;
 I know thee not, nor ever saw till now

Sight more detestable than him and thee. ~

To whom thus the portress of hell gate reply'd. 640

Hast thou forgot me then, and do I seem

Now in thine eye so foul? Once deem'd so fair

In heav'n, when at th' assembly, and in sight

Of all the Seraphim with thee combin'd

In bold conspiracy against heav'n's king, 645

All on a sudden miserable pain

Surpris'd thee, dim thine eyes, and dizzy swum

In darkness, while thy head flames thick and fast

Threw forth, till on the left side opening wide,

Likest to thee in shape and count'nance bright, 650

Then shining heav'nly fair, a goddess arm'd

Out of thy head I sprung : amazement seiz'd

All th' host of heav'n; back they recoil'd afraid

At first, and call'd me Sin, and for a sign

Portentous held me; but familiar grown, 655

I pleas'd, and with attractive graces won

The most averse, thee chiefly, who full oft

Thyself in me thy perfect image viewing

Becam'st enamour'd, and such joy thou took'st

With me in secret, that my womb conceiv'd 660

A growing burden. Mean while war arose,

And fields were fought in heav'n; wherein remain'd

(For what could else?) to our almighty foe

Clear victory, to our part loss and rout

Through all the empyrean : down they fell 665

Into this deep, and in the general fall

I also; at which time this pow'rful key

Into my hand was giv'n, with charge to keep

These gates for ever shut, which none can pass

Without my opening. Pensive here I sat 670
 Alone, but long I sat not, till my womb
 Pregnant by thee, and now excessive grown
 Prodigious motion felt and rueful throes.
 At last this odious offspring, whom thou see'st
 Thine own begotten, breaking violent way 675
 Tore through my entrails, that with fear and pain
 Distorted, all my nether shape thus grew
 Transform'd: but he my inbred enemy
 Forth issued, brandishing his fatal dart
 Made to destroy: I fled, and cry'd out Death; 680
 Hell trembled at the hideous name, and sigh'd
 From all her caves, and back resounded "Death."
 I fled, but he pursued, (though more, it seems,
 Inflam'd with lust than rage) and swifter far,
 Me overtook his mother all dismay'd, 685
 And in embraces forcible and foul
 Ingendring with me, of that rape begot
 These yelling monsters, that with ceaseless cry
 Surround me, as thou saw'st, hourly conceiv'd
 And hourly born, with sorrow infinite 690
 To me; for when they list, into the womb
 That bred them they return, and howl and gnaw
 My bowels, their repast; then bursting forth
 Afresh with conscious terrors vex me round,
 That rest or intermission none I find. 695
 Before mine eyes in opposition sits
 Grim Death my son and foe, who sets them on,
 And me his parent would full soon devour
 For want of other prey, but that he knows
 His end with mine involv'd; so fate pronounc'd. 700
 But thou, O father, I forewarn thee, shun

His deadly arrow; neither vainly hope
To be invulnerable in those bright arms,
Though temper'd heav'nly, for that mortal dint,
Save he who reigns above, none can resist.

705

She finish'd, and the subtle fiend his lore
Soon learn'd, now milder, and thus answer'd smooth.

Dear daughter, since thou claim'st me for thy sire,
And my fair son here shew'st me, the dear pledge
Of dalliance had with thee in heaven, know
I come no enemy, but to set free

710

From out this dark and dismal house of pain
Both him and thee, and all the heav'nly host
Of spirits, that in our just pretences arm'd

Fell with us from on high: from them I go

715

This uncouth errand sole, and one for all

Myself expose, with lonely steps to tread

Th' unfounded deep, and through the void immense

To search with wand'ring quest a place foretold

Should be, and, by concurring signs, ere now

120

Created vast and round, a place of bliss

In the purlieus of heav'n, and therein plac'd

A race of upstart creatures, to supply

Perhaps our vacant room, though more remov'd,

Left heav'n furcharg'd with potent multitude

725

Might hap to move new broils: Be this or ought

Than this more secret now design'd, I haste

To know, and this once known, shall soon return,

And bring you to the place where thou and Death

Shall dwell at ease, and up and down unseen

730

Wing silently the buxom air, imbalm'd

With odors; there ye shall be fed and fill'd:

Immeasurably, all things shall be your prey.

He ceas'd, for both seem'd highly pleas'd, and Death

Grinn'd horrible a ghastly smile, to hear

735

His famine should be fill'd : no less rejoic'd

His mother bad, and thus bespake her fire.

The key of this infernal pit by due,

And by command of heav'n's all pow'rful king

I keep, by him forbidden to unlock

740

These adamantine gates ; against all force

Death ready stands to interpose his dart,

Fearless to be o'ermatch'd by living might.

But what owe I to his commands above

Who hates me, and hath hither thrust me down

745

To sit in hateful office here confin'd,

Inhabitant of heav'n, and heav'nly-born.

Thou art my father, thou my author, thou

My being gav'st me ; whom should I obey

But thee, whom follow ? Thou wilt bring me soon

750

To that new world of light and bliss, among

The gods who live at ease, where I shall reign

At thy right hand voluptuous, as befits

Thy daughter and thy darling, without end.

Thus saying, from her side the fatal key,

755

Sad instrument of all our woe, she took ;

And tow'ards the gate rolling her bestial train,

Forthwith the huge portcullis high up drew,

Which but herself, not all the Stygian powers

Could once have mov'd : then in the key-hole turns

760

Th' intricate wards, and every bolt and-bar

Of massy ir'on or solid rock with ease

Unfastens ; * on a sudden open fly

With impetuous recoil and jarring sound

Th' infernal doors, and on their hinges grate 765
 Harsh thunder, that the lowest bottom shook
 Of Erebus. She open'd, but to shut
 Excell'd her pow'r; the gates wide open'd stood,
 That with extended wings a banner'd host
 Under spread ensigns marching might pass through 770
 With horse and chariots rank'd in loose array;
 So wide they stood, and like a furnace mouth
 Cast forth redounding smoke and ruddy flame.
 Before their eyes in sudden view appear
 The secrets of the hoary deep, a dark 775
 Illimitable ocean, without bound,
 Without dimension, where length, breadth, and height
 And time, and place are lost; where eldest Night
 And Chaos, ancestors of nature, hold
 Eternal anarchy, amidst the noise 780
 Of endless wars. Into this wild abyss,
 The womb of nature and perhaps her grave,
 Of neither sea, nor shore, nor air, nor fire,
 But all these in their pregnant causes mix'd
 Confus'dly, and which thus must ever fight, 785
 Unless th' almighty maker them ordain
 His dark materials to create more worlds:
 Into this wild abyss the wary fiend
 Stood on the brink of hell and look'd a while,
 Pond'ring his voyage; for no narrow frith 790
 He had to cross. Nor was his ear less peal'd
 With noises ruinous than if this frame
 Of heav'n were falling, and these elements
 In mutiny had from her axle torn
 The steadfast earth. At last his sail-broad vans 795

He spreads for flight, and in the surging smoke
 Uplifted spurns the ground ; thence many a league,
 As in a cloudy chair, ascending rides
 Audacious ; but that seat soon falling, meets
 A vast vacuity : all unawares 800
 Fluttering his pennons vain plumb down he drops
 Ten thousand fathom deep, * and to this hour
 Down had been falling, had not the rebuff
 Of some tumultuous cloud hurried him back
 As many miles aloft : that fury stay'd, 805
 Quench'd in a boggy Syrtis, neither sea,
 Nor good dry land ; nigh founder'd on he fares,
 'Treading the crude consistence, half on foot,
 Half fly'ing ; behoves him now both oar and sail.
 At length a universal hubbub wild 810
 Of stunning sounds and voices all confus'd,
 Borne through the hollow dark, assaults his ear
 With loudest vehemence : thither he plies,
 Undaunted to meet there whatever power
 Or spirit of the nethermost abyfs 815
 Might in that noise reside, of whom to ask
 Which way the nearest coast of darkness lies
 * Bord'ring on light ; when strait behold the throne
 Of Chaos, and his dark pavilion spread
 Wide on the wasteful deep ; with him enthron'd 820
 Sat sable-vested Night, eldest of things,
 The consort of his reign : and by them Chance
 And Tumult and Confusion all embroil'd,
 And Discord with a thousand various mouths.*
 T' whom Satan turning boldly, thus. Ye pow'rs
 And spirits of this nethermost abyfs, 825
 Chaos and ancient Night, I come no spy

Book
 With
 The f
 Wand
 Lies t
 Alone
 What
 Confi
 From
 Posses
 I trav
 Direc
 To yo
 All u
 To he
 (Whic
 Erect
 Yours
 Thu
 With
 Answ
 That m
 Made
 I saw
 Fled n
 With
 Confu
 Pour'd
 Pursui
 Keep
 That
 Encroa
 Weak

With purpose to explore or to disturb
The secrets of your realm, but by constraint
Wand'ring this darksome desert, as my way
Lies through your spacious empire up to light, 830
Alone, and without guide, half lost, I seek
What readiest path leads where your gloomy bounds
Confine with heav'n; or if some other place,
From your dominion won, th' ethereal king
Possesses lately, thither to arrive 835
I travel this profound; direct my course;
Directed no mean recompence it brings
To your behoof, if I that region lost,
All usurpation thence expell'd, reduce
To her original darkness and your sway 840
(Which is my present journey) and once more
Erect the standard there of ancient Night;
Yours be th' advantage all, mine the revenge.
Thus Satan: and him thus the anarch old,
With faltering speech, and visage incompass'd, 845
Answer'd. I know thee, stranger, who thou art,
That mighty leading angel, who of late
Made head against heav'n's king, though overthrown.
I saw and heard, for such a numerous host
Fled not in silence through the frighted deep 850
With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout,
Confusion worse confounded; and heav'n's gates
Pour'd out by millions her victorious bands
Pursuing. I upon my frontiers here
Keep residence; if all I can will serve 855
That little which is left so to defend,
Encroach'd on still through your intestine broils
Weakning the sceptre of old Night; first hell

Your dungeon stretching far and wide beneath :
Now lately heav'n and earth, another world, 860
Hung o'er my realm, link'd in a golden chain
To that side heav'n from whence your legions fell :
If that way be your walk, you have not far :
So much the nearer danger : go and speed ;
Havoc and spoil and ruin are my gain, . 865

He ceas'd ; and Satan stay'd not to reply,
But glad that now his sea should find a shore,
With fresh alacrity and force renew'd
Springs upward like a pyramid of fire
Into the wild expanse, and through the shock 870
Of fighting elements, on all sides round
Environ'd wins his way ; with labour he ;
But he once past, soon after when man fell,
Strange alteration ! Sin and Death amain
Following his track, such was the will of heaven, 875
Pav'd after him a broad and beaten way.

* But now at last the sacred influence
Of light appears, and from the walls of heaven
Shoots far into the bosom of dim Night
A glimmering dawn ; here Nature first begins 880
Her farthest verge, and Chaos to retire
As from her utmost works a broken foe,
With tumult less and with less hostile din,
That Satan with less toil, and now with ease
Wafts on the calmer wave by dubious light, 885
Or in the emptier waste, resembling air,
Weighs his spread wings, at leisure to behold
Far off th' empyreal heav'n, extended wide,
With opal tow'rs and battlements adorn'd 890

Of living saphire, once his native seat ;
And fast by hanging in a golden chain
This pendent world, in bigness as a star
Of smallest magnitude close by the moon.*
Thither full fraught with mischievous revenge,
Accurs'd, and in a curst hour he hies.

895





Notes on PARADISE LOST.

B O O K II.

- Ver. 11. *Dread*—Dreadful.
- Ver. 42. *Recked not*—Cared not. *Thereafter*.—Accordingly.
- Ver. 50. *Opprobrious*.—Reproachful.
- Ver. 61. *Tartarean*.—Hellish.
- Ver. 78. *This essential*.—This essence or nature.
- Ver. 105. *In fact of Arms*.—In Battle.
- Ver. 128. *Intellectual*.—Endowed with understanding.
- Ver. 137. *Belike*.—It is likely: it is ironical.
- Ver. 137. *Impotence*.—Impotent, ungoverned Passion.
- Ver. 157. *Cataracts*.—Violently falling Floods.
- Ver. 167. *Of hopeless End*.—Without hope of End.
- Ver. 188. *Satisfied with what is punished*.—With the Punishment already inflicted.
- Ver. 219. *Ambrosial*.—Delightful.
- Ver. 252. *The Sensible*.—The Sensibility.
- Ver. 280. Mount *Atlas* is always covered with Clouds.
Hence the Fable of *Atlas* bearing the Skies on his Shoulders.

Ver. 283. In many countries it is generally calm about

Noon, especially in *Summer*.

Ver. 316. *The Gods*—The holy Angels.

Ver. 322. *Arbitrator*.—Governor.

Ver. 349 *Synod*.—Assembly.

Ver. 354. *Opportune*.—At a fit time.

Ver. 355. *Zone*.—Region, Climate.

Ver. 357. *Orient*.—Rising.

Ver. 359 *Corrosive*.—Gnawing, eating into the Substance.

Ver. 364. *The palpable Obscure*.—Darkness that may be felt.

Ver. 367. *The vast Abrupt*.—The huge Precipice.

Ver. 368. *The happy Isle*.—The earth, floating in the Ether, as Islands do in the Sea.

Ver. 373. *Suffrage*.—Vote.

Ver. 383. *Transcendant*.—Excelling them all.

Ver. 387. *Unmoved*.—With the Dangers that affrighted Others.

V 388. *Progeny*.—Offspring.

Ver. 392. *Convex*.—The Vault bending round us.

Ver. 393. *Immures us*.—Walls us in.

Ver. 395. *Egrefs*.—Going out.

Ver. 397. *Unessential*.—Uncreated, void of Being.

Ver. 399. *Abortive*.—An *Abortion* is properly a miscarriage.

The word therefore is strongly figurative. Nor is it easy to give it a determinate meaning.

Ver. 415. *Intend*.—Consider, think of, mind.

Ver. 447. *The Element*.—The sky.

Ver. 463. *Stygian*.—Hellish.—*Diffolved*.—Broke up.

Ver. 464 —*Paramount*.—Sovereign.

Ver. 467. *A Globe*.—A battalion in circle surrounding

him. *Imblazonry*—Shields, imblazoned, or painted with their Atchievements. *Horrent*.—Set up like the Bristles of an enraged Wild Boar.

Ver. 482. *Typhoean rage*.—Like that of *Typhoeus*, one of the Giants whom the Heathens supposed to have warred against Heaven. Doubtless that Tradition rose from the Fall of the Angels.

Ver. 482. *Fell*.—Fine.

Ver. 495. *More Elevate*.—Raised higher.

Ver. 499 *And found no end*.—There is no end of *Reasoning* concerning these things. Happy therefore are they, who simply keep to the Bible.

Ver. 514. *Styx, Acheron, &c.*—These were, according to the Heathen Poets, the four Rivers of Hell.

Ver. 518. *Torrent*.—Scorching.

Ver. 523. *Burns froze*.—*Frore* is an old Word for frosty.

Ver. 524. *Harp-footed*—With sharp Claws, like the fabled *Harpies*, whom the Heathen Poets described as having Eagles Talons. *Furies*.—Devils assuming the most dreadful Shapes.

Ver. 536. *Dolorous*.—Sad.

Ver. 537. *Alp*.—Mountain, high as the *Alps*.

Ver. 548. *Explores*.—Tries, searches out.

Ver. 555. *Impaled*.—Surrounded.

Ver. 560. *Voluminous*.—Twisting round.

Ver. 637. *Phantasm*.—Appearance.

Ver. 644. The *Seraphim* are supposed to be the highest Order of Angels.

Ver. 652. *A Goddess arm'd out of thine hand I sprung*.—A the Heathen Poets supposed *Minerva*, the Goddess of Wisdom, to have done out of the Head of *Jupiter*:

Probably from some imperfect Tradition, concerning the Son of God.

Ver. 665. *The empyrean*.—The sky.

Ver. 688. *These yelling Monsters*.—Was ever so fine a Description of Pangs of Conscience?

Ver. 706. *Lore*.—Lesson.

Ver. 716. *Sole*.—Alone. *Unfounded*.—Wherein there is Foundation, nothing to tread upon.

Ver. 719. *Quest*.—Enquiry. *Parties*.—Confines, Borders.

Ver. 731. *Buxom*.—Properly yielding; from a Saxon Word which signifies to bend.

Ver. 767. *Erebus*.—Hell.

Ver. 773. *Redounding*.—Spreading every way in curling Waves.

Ver. 775. *Hoary*.—That is, old. *Secrets*.—Never seen before by any Creature.

Ver. 776. *Illimitable*.—Unbounded.

Ver. 777. *Without Dimension*.—So empty Space, must needs be.

Ver. 779. *Ancestors of Nature*.—The antient Poets describe *Night* or *Darkness*, and *Chaos* or *Confusion*, as the first of Things, and exercising uncontrolled dominion from the Beginning. In how Masterly a manner does Milton paint this? *Anarchy* is just the reverse of regular Government.

Ver. 780. *Pregnant*.—Big with future effects.

Ver. 790. *A Frith* is an arm of the Sea.

Ver. 792. *Noises ruinous*.—Of things rushing to and fro.

Ver. 794. *Her Axle*.—The Earth moves round every 24 Hours, as a Wheel on its Axle-tree.

Ver. 795. *Vans.*—Wings. *Surging.*—Rising like the waves of the Sea:

Ver. 799. *Audacious.*—Bold.

Ver. 806. A *Syrtis* is a Quick-sand.

Ver. 808. *The crude confcience*, the undigested Mass.

Ver. 833. *Confine with Heaven.*—Border upon it.

Ver. 838. *Behoof.*—Advantage.

Ver. 844. *Anarch.*—Author of disorder and Confusion: Just opposite to Monarch.

Ver. 853. *Pour'd out by Millions.*—So it might seem to him, while *Confusion* was worse confounded. But it was the Messiah alone who did all.

Ver. 857. *Your intestine Broils.* In Heaven, which gave occasion to the Creation of Hell and Earth.

Ver. 868. *Alacrity.*—Chearfulness.

Ver. 890. *Opal Tow'rs.*—Towers of precious stones. An Opal is a precious Stone of various Colours.

Ver. 893. *This pendent world.*—Not the earth, but the whole Universe. And even this, at so vast a Distance appeared as one of the smallest stars. He does not see the Earth, till some Time after.

Ver. 896. *Hies.*—Hastens.



PARADISE LOST.

BOOK III.

THE ARGUMENT.

God sitting on his throne sees Satan flying towards this world, then newly created ; shews him to the Son who sat at his right hand ; foretells the success of Satan in perverting mankind ; clears his own justice and wisdom from all imputation, having created man free and able enough to have withstood his tempter ; yet declares his purpose of grace towards him, in regard he fell not of his own malice, as did Satan, but by him seduc'd. The Son of God renders praises to his Father for the manifestations of his gracious purpose towards man ; but God again declares, that grace cannot be extended towards man without the satisfaction of divine justice ; man hath offended the majesty of God by aspiring to Godhead, and therefore, with all his progeny, devoted to death must die, unless some one can be found sufficient to answer for his offence, and undergo his punishment. The Son of God freely offers himself a ransom for man ; the Father accepts him, ordains his incarnation, pronounces his exaltation above all names in heaven and earth ; commands all the angels to adore him ; they obey, and hymning to their harps in full quire, celebrate the Father and the Son. Meanwhile Satan alights upon the bare convex of this world's outermost orb ; thence comes to the gate of heaven, de-

scrib'd ascending by stairs, and the waters above the firmament that flow about it: his passage then to the orb of the sun; he finds there Uriel the regent of that orb, but first changes himself into the shape of a meaner angel; and pretending a zealous desire to behold the new creation, and man whom God had placed here, inquires of him the place of his habitation, and is directed; alights first on mount Niphates.

HAIL holy Light, offspring of heav'n first-born,
Or of th' Eternal coeternal beam!

May I express thee unblam'd? Since God is light,
And never but in unapproach'd light

Dwelt from eternity, dwelt then in thee, 5
Bright effluence of bright essence increate.

Or hear'st thou rather pure ethereal stream,
Whose fountain who shall tell? Before the sun,
Before the heav'ns thou wast. and at the voice
Of God, as with a mantle didst invest 10

The rising world of waters dark and deep,
Won from the void and formless infinite.

Thee I re-visit now with bolder wing,
And feel thy sovereign vital lamp; but thou
Revisit'st not these eyes, that roll in vain 15

To find thy piercing ray, and find no dawn;
So thick a drop serene hath quench'd their orbs,
Or dim suffusion veil'd. Yet not the more

Cease I to wander, where the muses haunt
Clear spring, or shady grove, or sunny hill,
Smit with the love of sacred song; but chief 20
Thee, Sion, and the flowry brooks beneath,

Book

That

Night

Sings

Tunes

Season

Day,

Or fight

Or flood

But clo

Surrou

Cut off

Present

Of nat

And w

So muc

Shine i

Irradiat

Purge a

Of thin

Now

From th

High th

His own

About h

Stood th

Beatitud

The rad

His only

Our tw

Of man

Reaping

Uninter

That wash thy hallow'd feet, and warbling flow,
Nightly I visit : as the wakeful bird
Sings darkling, and in shadiest covert hid 25
Tunes her nocturnal note. Thus with the year
Seasons return, but not to me returns
Day, or the sweet approach of ev'n or morn,
Or sight of vernal bloom, or summer's rose,
Or flocks, or herds, or human face divine ; 30
But clouds instead, and ever-during dark
Surrounds me, from the chearful ways of men
Cut off, and for the book of knowledge fair
Presented with a universal blank
Of nature's work to me expung'd and ras'd, 35
And wisdom at one entrance quite shut out.
So much the rather thou, celestial light,
Shine inward, and the mind through all her powers
Irradiate, there plant eyes, all mist from thence
Purge and disperse, that I may see and tell 40
Of things invisible to mortal sight.*

Now had th' Almighty Father from above,
From the pure empyrean where he sits
High thron'd above all height, bent down his eye,
His own works and their works at once to view : 45
About him all the Sanctities of heaven
Stood thick as stars, and from his sight receiv'd
Beatitude past utterance ; on his right
The radiant image of his glory sat,
His only Son ; on earth he first beheld 50
Our two first parents, yet the only two
Of mankind, in that happy garden plac'd,
Reaping immortal fruits of joy and love,
Uninterrupted joy, unrival'd love

In blisful solitude; he then survey'd
 Hell and the gulph between, and Satan there
 Coasting the wall of heav'n on this side night
 In the dun air sublime, and ready now
 To stoop with wearied wings and willing feet
 On the bare outside of this world, that seem'd
 Firm land imbosom'd, without firmament,
 Uncertain which, in ocean or in air.
 Him God beholding from his prospect high,
 Wherein past, present, future he beholds,
 Thus to his only Son foreseeing spake.

Only begotten Son, see'st thou what rage
 Transports our adversary? Whom no bounds
 Prescrib'd, no bars of hell, nor all the chains
 Heap'd on him there, nor yet the main abyfs
 Wide interrupt can hold; so bent he seems
 On desperate revenge, that shall redound
 Upon his own rebellious head. And now
 Through all restraint broke loose he wings his way
 Not far off heav'n, in the precincts of light,
 Directly tow'ards the new created world,
 And man there plac'd, with purpose to assay,
 If him by force he can destroy, or worse,
 By some false guile pervert; and shall pervert,
 For man will hearken to his glozing lies,
 And easily transgress the sole command,
 Sole pledge of his obedience: So will fall,
 He and his faithless progeny: Whose fault?
 * Whose but his own? Ingrate, he had of me
 All he could have: I made him just and right,
 Sufficient to have stood, though free to fall.
 Such I created all th' ethereal powers

Book
 And
 Free
 Not
 Of t
 Whe
 Not v
 What
 Whe
 Useles
 Made
 Not m
 So we
 Their
 As if p
 Their
 Or hig
 Their c
 Forekn
 Which
 So wit
 Or oug
 They t
 Both w
 I form
 Till the
 Their n
 Unchan
 Their f
 The fir
 Self-tem
 By th'
 That oth

And spi'rits, both them who stood and them who fail'd :
 Freely they stood who stood, and fell who fell.
 Not free, what proof could they have giv'n sincere
 Of true allegiance, constant faith or love, o
 Where only what they needs must do appear'd,
 Not what they would ? What praise could they receive ?
 What pleasure I from such obedience paid,
 When will and reason (reason also is choice)
 Useless and vain, of freedom both despoil'd, 95
 Made passive both, had serv'd necessity,
 Not me ? They therefore as to right belong'd,
 So were created, nor can justly' accuse
 Their maker, or their making, or their fate,
 As if predestination over-rul'd 100
 Their will, dispos'd by absolute decree
 Or high foreknowledge ; they themselves decreed
 Their own revolt, not I ; if I foreknew,
 Foreknowledge had no influence on their fault,
 Which had no less prov'd certain unforeknown. 105
 So without least impulse or shadow' of fate,
 Or ought by me immutably foreseen,
 They trespass, authors to themselves in all
 Both what they judge and what they choose ; for so
 I form'd them free, and free they must remain, 110
 Till they inthrall themselves : I else must change
 Their nature, and revoke the high decree
 Unchangeable, eternal, which ordain'd
 Their freedom, they themselves ordain'd their fall.
 The first sort by their own suggestion fell,
 Self-tempted, self-deprav'd : Man falls, deceiv'd
 By th' other first : Man therefore shall find grace,
 That other none : in mercy' and justice both,

Through heav'n and earth, so shall my glory excel,
But mercy first and last shall brightest shine.* 120

Thus while God spake, ambrosial fragrance fill'd
All heav'n, and in the blessed spirits elect
Sense of new joy ineffable diffus'd :
Beyond compare the Son of God was seen
Most glorious; in him all his Father shone 125
Substantially express'd ; and in his face
Divine compassion visible appear'd
Love without end, and without measure grace,
Which uttering thus he to his Father spake.

O Father, gracious was that word which clos'd 130
Thy sovereign sentence, that man should find grace ;
For which both heav'n and earth shall high extol
Thy praises, with th' innumerable sound
Of hymns and sacred songs, wherewith thy throne
Incompass'd shall resound thee ever blest. 135
For should man finally be lost, should man,
Thy creature late so lov'd, thy youngest son,
Fall circumvented thus by fraud, though join'd
With his own folly ? That he from thee far,
That far be from thee, Father, who art judge 140
Of all things made, and judgest only right.
Or shall the adversary thus obtain
His end, and frustrate thine ? Shall he fulfil
His malice, and thy goodness bring to nought,
Or proud return, though to his heavier doom, 145
Yet with revenge accomplish'd, and to hell
Draw after him the whole race of mankind,
By him corrupted ? Or wilt thou thyself
Abolish thy creation, and unmake
For him, what for thy glory thou hast made ? 150

So should thy goodness and thy greatness both
Be question'd and blasphem'd without defence.

To whom the great Creator thus reply'd.

O Son, in whom my soul hath chief delight,

Son of my bosom, Son who art alone

155

My word, my wisdom, and effectual might,

All hast thou spoken as my thoughts are, all

As my eternal purpose hath decreed :

Man shall not quite be lost, but sav'd who will,

* Yet not of will in him, but grace in me

160

Freely vouchsaf'd ; once more I will renew

His laps'd powers, forfeit and intrall'd

By sin to foul exorbitant desires ;

Upheld by me, yet once more he shall stand

On even ground against his mortal foe,

165

By me upheld, that he may know how frail

His fall'n condition is, and to me owe

All his deliverance, and to none but me,

For all shall hear me call, and oft be warn'd

Their sinful state, and to appease betimes

170

Th' incens'd deity, while offer'd grace

Invites ; for I will soften stony hearts

To pray, repent, and bring obedience due.

To pray'r, repentance, and obedience due,

Though but endeavour'd with sincere intent,

175

Mine ear shall not be slow, mine eye not shut.

And I will place within them as a guide

My umpire conscience, whom if they will hear,

Light after light well us'd they shall attain,

And to the end persisting, safe arrive.

180

This my long sufferance and my day of grace

They who neglect and scorn, shall never taste ;

But hard be harden'd, blind be blinded more,
And none but such from mercy I exclude.* 185

But yet all is not done ; man disobeying,
Disloyal breaks his fealty, and sins
Against the high supremacy of heaven,
Affecting God-head ; and so losing all,

To expiate his treason hath nought left, 190
But to destruction sacred and devote,

He with his whole posterity must die,
Die he or justice must ; unless for him
Some other able, and as willing, pay
The rigid satisfaction, death for death. 195

Say, heav'nly pow'rs where shall we find such love ?
Which of you will be mortal to redeem

Man's mortal crime, and just th' unjust to save ?
Dwells in all heaven charity so dear ?

He ask'd, but all the heav'nly quire stood mute, 200
And silence was in heav'n : on man's behalf

Patron or intercessor none appear'd,
Much less that durst upon his own head draw
The deadly forfeiture, and ransom set.

And now without redemption all mankind 205
Must have been lost, had not the Son of God,
In whom the fulness dwells of love divine,
His dearest mediation thus renew'd.

* Father, thy word is past, man shall find grace ;
And shall not grace find means, that finds her way 210
The speediest of thy winged messengers,
To visit all thy creatures, and to all

Comes unprevented, unimplor'd, unsought ?
Happy for man, so coming ; he her aid
Can never seek, once dead in sins and lost ; 215

Atonement for himself or offering meet,
Indebted and undone, hath none to bring :
Behold me then ; me for him, life for life
I offer ; on me let thine anger fall ;
Account me man ; I for his sake will leave 220
Thy bosom, and this glory next to thee
Freely put off, and for him lastly die
Well pleas'd ; on me let death wreak all his rage ;
Under his gloomy pow'r I shall not long
Lie vanquish'd : thou hast giv'n me to possess 225
Life in myself for ev'r ; by thee I live,
Though now to death I yield, and am his due
All that of me can die ; yet that debt paid,
Thou wilt not leave me in the loathsome grave
His prey, nor suffer my unspotted soul 230
For ever with corruption there to dwell ;
But I shall rise victorious, and subdue
My vanquisher, spoil'd of his vaunted spoil ;*
I through the ample air in triumph high
Shall lead hell captive, maugre hell, and show 235
The pow'rs of darkness bound. Thou at the sight
Pleas'd, out of heaven shalt look down and smile,
While by thee rais'd I ruin all my foes,
Death last, and with his carcase glut the grave :
Then with the multitude of my redeem'd - 240
Shall enter heav'n long absent, and return,
Father, to see thy face, wherein no cloud
Of anger shall remain, but peace assur'd
And reconcilment ; wrath shall be no more
Thenceforth, but in thy presence joy entire. 245

His words here ended, but his meek aspect
 Silent yet spake, and breath'd immortal love
 To mortal men, above which only shone
 Filial obedience : as a sacrifice
 Glad to be offer'd, he attends the will 250
 Of his great Father. Admiration seiz'd
 All heav'n, what this might mean, and whither tend
 Wond'ring ; but soon th' Almighty thus reply'd.

O thou in heav'n and earth the only peace
 Found out for mankind under wrath, O thou 255
 My sole complacence ! Well thou know'st how dear
 To me are all my works, nor man the least,
 Though last created ; that for him I spare
 Thee from my bosom and right hand, to save,
 By losing thee a while, the whole race lost. 260
 * Thou therefore, whom thou only canst redeem,
 Their nature also to thy nature join ;
 And be thyself man among men on earth,
 Made flesh, when time shall be, of virgin seed,
 By wondrous birth : be thou in Adam's room 265
 The head of all mankind, though Adam's son.
 As in him perish all men, so in thee,
 As from a second root, shall be restor'd
 As many as are restor'd, without thee none.
 His crime makes guilty all his sons ; thy merit 270
 Imputed shall absolve them who renounce
 Their own both righteous and unrighteous deeds,
 And live in thee transplanted, and from thee
 Receive new life. So man, as is most just,
 Shall satisfy for man, be judg'd and die, 275
 And dying rise, and rising with him raise

Book III. PARADISE LOST

75

His brethren, ransom'd with his own dear life.*

Nor shalt thou, by descending to assume

Man's nature, lessen or degrade thine own.

280

Because thou hast, though thron'd in highest bliss

Equal to God, and equally enjoying

God-like fruition, quitted all to save

A world from utter loss, because in thee

Love hath abounded more than glory abounds,

285

Therefore thy humiliation shall exalt

With thee thy manhood also to this throne;

Here shalt thou sit incarnate, here shalt reign

Both God and man, son both of God and man.

All knees to thee shall bow, of them that bide

290

In heav'n, or earth, or under earth in hell.

When thou attended gloriously from heaven

Shalt in the sky appear. Then thou shalt judge

Bad men and angels; they arraign'd shall sink

Beneath thy sentence; hell, her numbers full,

295

Thenceforth shall be for ever shut. Mean while

The world shall burn, and from her ashes spring

New heav'n and earth, wherein the just shall dwell,

With joy and love triumphing, and fair truth.

Then thou thy regal sceptre shalt lay by,

300

For regal sceptre thou no more shalt need,

God shall be all in all. But all ye gods,

Adore him, who to compass all this dies;

Adore the Son, and honour him as me.

No sooner had th' Almighty ceas'd, but all

305

The multitude of angels gave a shout

Loud as from numbers, without number, sweet

As from blest voices, uttering joy, heav'n rung
 With jubilee, and loud Hosanna's fill'd
 Th' eternal regions : lowly reverent
 Tow'ards either throne they bow, and to the ground
 With solemn adoration down they cast
 Their crowns inwove with amaranth and gold ;
 Immortal amaranth, a flow'r which once
 In Paradise, fast by the tree of life, 315
 Began to bloom ; but soon for man's offence
 To heav'n remov'd, where first it grew, there grows,
 And flow'rs aloft shading the fount of life.
 With this that never fades the spi'rits elect
 Bind their resplendent locks inwreath'd with beams, 320
 Now in loose garlands thick thrown off, the bright
 Pavement, that like a sea of jasper shone,
 Impurpled with celestial roses smil'd.
 Then crown'd again, their golden harps they took,
 Harps ever tun'd, that glittering by their side 325
 Like quivers hung, and with preambles sweet,
 O charming symphony ! they introduce
 Their sacred song, and waken raptures high ;
 No voice exempt, no voice but well could join
 Melodious part, such concord is in heaven. 330

* Thee Father, first they sung omnipotent,
 Immutable, immortal, infinite,
 Eternal king ; thee author of all being,
 Fountain of light, thyself invisible
 (Amidst the glorious brightness where thou sit'st 335
 Thron'd inaccessible) but when thou shad'st
 The full blaze of thy beams : then through a cloud
 Drawn round about thee like a radiant shrine,

Dark with excessive bright thy skirts appear,
Yet dazzle heav'n, that brightest Seraphim 340
Approach not, but with both wings veil their eyes.
Thee next they sang of all creation first,
Begotten son, divine Similitude,
In whose conspicuous count'nance, without cloud
Made visible, th' almighty Father shines, 345
Whom else, no creature can behold; on thee
Impress'd th' effulgence of his glory' abides,
Transfus'd on thee his ample Spirit rests:
He heav'n of heav'ns and all the pow'rs therein
By thee created, and by thee threw down 350
Th' aspiring Dominations: thou that day
Thy Father's dreadful thunder didst not spare,
Nor stop thy flaming chariot wheels, that shook
Heav'n's everlasting frame, while o'er the necks
Thou drov'st of warring angels disarray'd. 355
Back from pursuit thy pow'rs with loud acclaim
Thee only extoll'd, Son of thy Father's might,
To execute fierce vengeance on his foes,
Not so on man: Him through their malice fallen,
Father of mercy' and grace, thou didst not doom 360
So strictly; but much more to pity inclin'd:
No sooner did thy dear and only Son
Perceive thee purpos'd not to doom frail man
So strictly, but much more to pity' incline:
He to appease thy wrath, and end the strife 365
Of mercy and justice in thy face discern'd,
Regardless of the bliss wherein he sat
Second to thee, offer'd himself to die

For man's offence. O unexampled love
 Love no where to be found less than divine ! 379
 Hail, Son of God, Saviour of men, thy name
 Shall be the copious matter of my song
 Henceforth, and never shall my harp thy praise
 Forget, nor from thy Father's praise disjoin*
 Thus they in heav'n, above the starry sphere, 375
 Their happy hours in joy and hymning spent.
 Mean while upon the firm opacous globe
 Of this round world, whose first convex divides
 The luminous inferior orbs inclos'd
 From Chaos and th' inroad of Darkness old, 380
 Satan alighted walks : a globe far off
 It seem'd, now seems a boundless continent
 Dark, waste, and wild, under the frown of Night
 Starless expos'd, and ever-threatening storms
 Of Chaos blust'ring round, inclement sky ; 385
 Save on that side which from the wall of heaven,
 Though distant far, some small reflection gains
 Of glimmering air less vex'd with tempest loud :
 Here walk'd the fiend at large in spacious field.
 And long he wander'd till at last a gleam 390
 Of dawning light turn'd thither-ward in haste
 His travel'd steps : far distant he descries
 Ascending by degrees magnificent
 Up to the wall of heav'n a structure high :
 At top whereof, but far more rich appear'd 395
 The work as of a kingly palace gate,
 With frontispiece of diamond and gold
 Embellish'd ; thick with sparkling orient gems
 The portal shone, inimitable on earth

By m
 The fl
 Angel
 Of gu
 Satan
 That f
 Looks
 Of all
 At sig
 Round
 So high
 Of nig
 And w
 First re
 Throug
 Among
 Stars di
 Or othe
 Fortuna
 The gol
 Allur'd
 Throug
 Aloof t
 That fro
 Dispen
 Their st
 Days, m
 Turn sw
 By his r
 The uni
 With ge

By model, or by shading pencil drawn.
The stairs were such as whereon Jacob saw
Angels ascending and descending, bands
Of guardians bright, when he from Esau fled,
Satan from hence, now on the lower stair
That scal'd by steps of gold to heaven gate,
Looks down with wonder at the sudden view
Of all this world : but much more envy seiz'd,
At sight of all this world, he held so fair.
Round he surveys (and well might, where he stood
So high above the circling canopy
Of night's extended shade) from pole to pole :
And without longer pause into the world's
First region throws his sight and winds with ease
Through the pure marble air his oblique way,
Amongst innumerable stars, that shone,
Stars distant, but nigh hand seem'd other worlds;
Or other worlds they seem'd or happy isles,
Fortunate fields, and groves. Above them all
The golden sun in splendor likest heaven
Allur'd his eye ; thither his course he bends
Through the calm sky, where the great luminary
Aloof the vulgar constellations thick,
That from his lordly eye keep distance due,
Dispenses light from far ; they as they move
Their starry dance in numbers that compute
Days, months and years, towards his all-cheering lamp
Turn swift their various motions, or are turn'd
By his magnetic beam, that gently warms
The universe, and to each inward part
With gentle penetration, though unseen,

Shoots invisible virtue to the deep ;
 So wondrously was set his station bright.
 There lands the fiend, the place he found beyond
 Expression bright, compar'd with ought on earth,
 Not all parts like, but all alike inform'd 435
 With radiant light, as glowing ir'on with fire ;
 If metal, part seem'd gold, part silver clear ;
 If stone, carbuncle most or chrysolite.
 Here matter new to gaze the Devil met
 Undazzled far and wide his eye commands ; 440
 For sight no obstacle found here, and th' air,
 No where so clear, sharpen'd his visual ray
 To objects distant far, whereby he soon
 Saw within ken a glorious angel stand,
 The same whom John saw also in the sun : 445
 * His back was turn'd, but not his brightness hid !
 Of beaming sunny rays a golden tiar
 Circled his head, nor less his locks behind
 Illustrious on his shoulders sledged with wings
 Lay waving round ; on some great charge employ'd 450
 He seem'd, or fix'd in cogitation deep.*
 Glad was the spi'rit impure, as now in hope
 To find who might direct his wand'ring flight
 To Paradise the happy seat of man.
 But first he casts to change his proper shape, 455
 Which else might work him danger or delay :
 And now a stripling Cherub he appears,
 Not of the prime, yet such as in his face
 Youth smil'd celestial, and to ev'ry limb
 Suitable grace diffus'd, so well he feign'd : 460
 Under a coronet his flowing hair

In cur
 Of ma
 His ha
 Before
 He dro
 Ere he
 Admo
 Th' A
 Who i
 Stand
 That r
 Bear h
 Q'er se
 Urie
 In fig
 The fu
 Interp
 Where
 And h
 Like h
 To vis
 Unspea
 All the
 His chi
 All the
 Hath b
 Alone
 In whi
 His fix
 But all
 That I

In curls on either cheek play'd ; wings he wore
Of many a colour'd plume sprinkled with gold,
His habit fit for speed succinct, and held
Before his decent steps a silver wand. 465

He drew not nigh unheard ; the angel bright,
Ere he drew nigh, his radiant visage turn'd,
Admonish'd by his ear, and straight was known
Th' Arch-Angel Uriel, one of the seven
Who in God's presence, nearest to his throne, 470
Stand ready at command, and are his eyes
That run through all the heav'ns, or down to th' earth
Bear his swift errands over moist and dry,
O'er sea and land : him Satan thus accosts.

Uriel, for thou of those sev'n spi'rits that stand 475
In sight of God's high throne, gloriously bright,
The first art wont his great authentic will
Interpreter through highest heav'n to bring,
Where all his sons thy embassy attend ;
And here art likeliest by supreme decree 480
Like honour to obtain, and as his eye
To visit oft' this new creation round ;
Unspeakable desire to see, and know

All these his wond'rous works, but chiefly man,
His chief delight and favour, him for whom 485
All these his works so wond'rous he ordain'd,
Hath brought me from the choirs of Cherubim
Alone thus wand'ring Brightest Seraph, tell
In which of all these shining orbs hath Man
His fixed seat, or fixed seat hath none, 490
But all these shining orbs his choice to dwell ;
That I may find him, and with secret gaze

Or open admiration him behold,
 On whom the great Creator hath bestow'd
 Worlds, and on whom hath all these graces pour'd ; 495
 That both in him and all things, as is meet,
 The universal Maker we may praise ;
 Who justly hath driven out his rebel foes
 To deepest hell, and to repair that loss
 Created this new happy race of Men 500
 To serve him better : wise are all his ways.

* So spake the false dissembler unperceiv'd ;
 For neither Man nor Angel can discern
 Hypocrisy, the only evil that walks
 Invisible, except to God alone, 505
 By his permissive will, through heav'n and earth :
 And oft' though wisdom wake, suspicion sleeps
 At wisdom's gate, and to simplicity
 Resigns her charge, while goodness thinks no ill
 Where no ill seems : * which now for once beguil'd 510
 Uriel, though regent of the sun, and held
 The sharpest-sighted spi'rit of all in heaven :
 Who to the fraudulent impostor foul
 In his uprightness answer thus return'd.

* Fair angel, thy desire which tends to know 515
 The works of God, thereby to glorify
 The great Work-Master, leads to no excess
 That reaches blame, but rather merits praise
 The more it seems excess, that led thee hither
 From thy empyreal mansion thus alone, 520
 To witness with thine eyes what some perhaps
 Contented with report hear only' in heav'n :
 For wonderful indeed are all his works,

Book
 Pleas
 Had i
 But w
 Their
 That b
 * I fa
 This v
 Confu
 Stood
 Till a
 Light
 Swift t
 The cu
 And th
 Flew u
 That r
 Numbe
 Each h
 The res
 Look d
 With li
 That pl
 His day
 Night v
 (So call
 Timely
 Still en
 With bo
 Hence
 And in
 That sp

Pleasant to know, and worthiest to be all
Had in remembrance always with delight; 525

But what created mind can comprehend
Their number, or the wisdom infinite
That brought them forth, but hid their causes deep?

* I saw when at his word the formless mass,
This world's material mould, came to a heap: 530

Confusion heard his voice, and wild uproar
Stood rul'd, stood vast infinitude confin'd;

Till at his second bidding darkness fled,
Light shone, and order from disorder sprung;

Swift to their sev'ral quarters hasted then 535

The cumbrous elements, earth, flood, air, fire:

And this ethereal quintessence of heav'n

Flew upward, spirited with various forms,

That roll'd orbicular, and turn'd to stars

Numberless, as thou seest, and how they move; 540

Each had his place appointed, each his course;

The rest in circuit wall this universe.

Look downward on that globe, whose hither side

With light from hence, though but reflected, shines;

That place is earth, the seat of Man, that light 545

His day, which else as th' other hemisphere

Night would invade; but there the neigh'ring moon

(So call that opposite fair star) her aid

Timely' interposes, and her monthly round

Still ending, still renewing, through mid-heav'n, 550

With borrow'd light, her countenance triform

Hence fills and empties to enlighten th' earth,

And in her pale dominion checks the night.

That spot to which I point is Paradise,

Adam's abode, those lofty shades his bow'r, 555
Thy way thou canst not miss, me mine requires.*

Thus said he turn'd; and Satan, bowing low,
As to superior spi'rits is wont in heav'n,
Where honour due and rev'rence none neglects,
Took leave, and tow'ard the coast of earth beneath, 560
Throws his steep flight in many' an aery wheel,
Nor stay'd, till on Niphates' top he lights.



Ver. 6
Ver. 1
fusion
cural
Ver. 39
Ver. 46
Ver. 47
Ver. 58
Ver. 74
Ver. 79
Ver. 94
Ver. 12
Poets
Ver. 16
Ver. 16
Ver. 17
me.
Ver. 187



Notes on PARADISE LOST.

B O O K III.

- Ver. 6. *Effluence*.—What flows out from it.
- Ver. 17. *A Drop serene*.—Either a *Gutta Serena*, or *Suf-
fusion*, is a Species of blindness which is generally in-
curable.
- Ver. 39. *Irradiate*—Shine into, enlighten.
- Ver. 46. *The Sanctities*.—The holy angels.
- Ver. 47. *Beatitude*.—Happiness.
- Ver. 58. *Dun*.—Dusky.
- Ver. 74. *Precincts*.—Borders.
- Ver. 79. *Glozing*.—Flattering.
- Ver. 94. *Is Choice*.—That is, necessarily implies it.
- Ver. 121. *Ambrosial*.—Pleasing, delightful. The ancient
Poets term'd the food of the Gods *Ambrosia*.
- Ver. 162. *Lapsed*.—Fallen.
- Ver. 163. *Exorbitant*.—Irregular.
- Ver. 178. *My Umpire*—To arbitrate between them and
me.
- Ver. 187. *Faalty* is the Faith a subject owes to his Prince.

Ver. 235. *Maugre Hell*.—In spite of hell.

Ver. 322. The best *Jaspers* are of a Sea-green Colour.
Amarants are *Purple*.

Ver. 342. *Of all creation first*.—Before all creation, begotten before all worlds, even from eternity.

Ver. 356. They *extolled thee*, turning back.

Ver. 377. *Opacous*.—Not transparent.

Ver. 392. *Travelled*.—Tired.

Ver. 398. *Sparkling Orient Gems*.—Sparkling like the Morning.

Ver. 405. *Scaled*.—Went up.

Ver. 411. *From Pole to Pole*.—From the North to the Southernmost Point.

Ver. 414. *Marble Air*.—Smooth and white as polished Marble.

Ver. 422. *Aloof*.—At a Distance from.

Ver. 438. *Chrysolite*—A Stone of a bright gold colour.

Ver. 442. *His visual Ray*.—His Sight.

Ver. 448. A *Tiara* is a kind of Coronet.

Ver. 451. *Cogitation*.—Thought.

Ver. 464. *Succinct*.—Tucked up, girt round him.

Ver. 537. *This ethereal quintessence*.—The pure ether, distinct from the other four, from Earth, Water, Air and Fire.

Ver. 538. *Spirited with various Formed*.

That roll'd orbicular.—Those Forms are supposed to be that to the Stars, which our Spirit is to us. They roll orbicular, that is, move circularly.

Ver. 542. *The rest*.—Of the Ether.

Ver. 548. *Hemisphere*.—Half of the Sphere, or Globe.

Ver. 551. *Triform*.—Of three forms ; increasing, at full, and decreasing.

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK IV.

THE ARGUMENT.

Satan now in prospect of Eden, and nigh the place where he must now attempt the bold enterprize which he undertook alone against God and Man, falls into many doubts with himself, and many passions, fear, envy, and despair; but at length confirms himself in evil, journeys on to Paradise, whose outward prospect and situation is described; overleaps the bounds, sits in the shape of a cormorant on the tree of life, as highest in the garden to look about him. The garden described; Satan's first sight of Adam and Eve; his wonder at their excellent form and happy state, but with resolution to work their fall; over-hears their discourse, thence gathers that the tree of knowledge was forbidden them to eat of, under penalty of death; and thereon intends to found his temptation by seducing them to transgress: then leaves them a while to know further of their state by some other means. Mean while Uriel descending warns Gabriel, who had in charge the gate of Paradise, that some evil Spirit had escaped the deep, and passed at noon by his sphere in the shape of a good Angel down to Paradise, discovered after by his furious gestures in the mount. Gabriel promises to find him ere morning. Night coming on, Adam and Eve discourse of going to their rest; their bower described; their evening worship.

Gabriel drawing forth his bands of night-watch to walk the round of Paradise, appoints two strong Angels to Adam's bower lest the evil spirit should be there doing some harm to Adam or Eve sleeping; there they find him at the ear of Eve, tempting her in a dream, and bringing him, through unwilling, to Gabriel: by whom questioned, he scornfully answers, prepares resistance, but hindered by a sign from heaven, flies out of Paradise.

O FOR that warning voice, which he who saw
 Th' Apocalypse heard cry in heav'n aloud,
 Then when the Dragon, put to second rout,
 Came furious down to be reveng'd on men.
Woe to th' inhabitants on earth! That now, 5
 While time is, our first parents may be warn'd
 The coming of their secret foe! For now
 Satan, now first inflam'd with rage, came down,
 The tempter ere th' accuser of mankind,
 To wreck on innocent frail man his loss 10
 Of that first battle, and his flight to hell:
 Yet not rejoicing in his speed, though bold,
 Begins his dire attempt, which nigh the birth
 Now rolling boils in his tumultuous breast,
 And like a devilish engine back recoils 15
 Upon himself: horror and doubt distract
 His troubled thoughts, and from the bottom stir
 The hell within him; for within him hell
 He brings, and round about him; nor from hell
 One step, no more than from himself, can fly 20
 By change of place: now conscience wakes despair,
 That slumber'd wakes the bitter memory

Of what he was, what is, and what must be,
Worse ; of worse deeds worse sufferings must ensue.
Sometimes towards Eden, which now in his view 25
Lay pleasant, his griev'd look he fixes sad ;
Sometimes towards heav'n and the full-blazing sun,
Which now sat high in his meridian tower :
Then much revolving, thus in sighs began.

* O thou that with surpassing glory crown'd 30
Look'st from thy sole dominion like the God
Of this new world ; at whose sight all the stars
Hide their diminish'd heads ; to thee I call,
But with no friendly voice, and add thy name
O Sun, to tell thee how I hate thy beams, 35
That bring to my remembrance from what state
I fell, how glorious once above thy sphere :
Till pride and worse ambition threw me down
Warring in heav'n against heav'n's matchless king :
Ah wherefore ; he deserv'd no such return 40
From me, whom he created what I was
In that bright eminence, and with his good
Upbraided none ; nor was his service hard.
What could be less than to afford him praise,
The easiest recompence, and pay him thanks, 45
How due ! Yet all his good prov'd ill in me,
And wrought but malice ; lifted up so high
I disdain'd subjection, and thought one step higher
Wou'd set me highest, and in a moment quit
The debt immense of endless gratitude, 50
So burdensome still paying, paying still to owe :
Forgetful what from him I still receiv'd,

And understood not that a grateful mind
 By owing owes not, but still pays, at once
 Indebted and discharg'd ; what burden then ? 55
 O had his pow'rful destiny ordain'd
 Me some inferior angel, I had stood
 Then happy ; no unbounded hope had rais'd
 Ambition. Yet why not ? Some other pow'r
 As great might have aspired, and me, though mean, 60
 Drawn to his part. But other Powers as great
 Fell not, but stand unshaken, from within
 Or from without, to all temptations arm'd.
 Hadst thou the same free will and pow'r to stand ?
 Thou hadst : whom hast thou then or what t' accuse, 65
 But heav'n's free love dealt equally to all ?
 Be then his love accurs'd, since love or hate,
 To me alike, it deals eternal woe.
 Nay curs'd be thou ; since against his thy will
 Chose freely what it now so justly rues. 70
 Me miserable ! Which way shall I fly
 Infinite wrath, and infinite despair ?
 Which way I fly is hell ; myself am hell ;
 And in the lowest deep a lower deep
 Still threat'ning to devour me opens wide, 75
 To which the hell I suffer seems a heav'n.
 O then at last relent : is there no place
 Left for repentance, none for pardon left ?
 None left but by submission ; and that word
 Disdain forbids me, and my dread of shame 80
 Among the spi'rits beneath, whom I feduc'd
 With other promises and other vaunts
 Than to submit, boasting I could subdue

Book
 Th' C
 How
 Unde
 Whil
 With
 The l
 In m
 But f
 By a
 Woul
 What
 Vows
 For n
 Wher
 Which
 And h
 Short
 This k
 From
 All ho
 Of us
 Mank
 So fare
 Farew
 Evil b
 Divide
 By the
 As Ma
 Thu
 Thrice
 Which

Book IV. PARADISE LOST. 91

Th' Omnipotent. Ah me, they little know
How dearly I abide that boast so vain, 85

Under what torments inwardly I groan,
While they adore me on the throne of hell.
With diadem and scepter high advanc'd,
The lower still I fall, only supreme
In misery : such joy ambition finds. 90

But say I could repent, and could obtain
By act of grace my former state ; how soon
Would height fecal high thoughts, how soon unsay
What feign'd submission swore ? Ease would recant
Vows made in pain, as violent and void 95

For never can true reconcilment grow,
Where wounds of deadly hate have pierc'd so deep :
Which would but lead me to a worse relapse
And heavier fall : so should I purchase dear
Short intermission bought with double smart. 100

This knows my punisher ; therefore as far
From granting he, as I from begging peace :
All hope excluded thus, behold in stead
Of us out-cast, exil'd, his new delight,
Mankind created, and for him this world. 105

So farewell hope, and with hope farewell fear,
Farewel remorse : all good to me is lost ;
Evil be thou my good ; by thee at least
Divided empire with heav'n's king I hold,
By thee, and more than half perhaps will reign ; 110

As Man ere long, and this new world shall know.*

Thus while he spake each passion dimm'd his face,
Thrice chang'd with pale ire, envy, and despair ;
Which marr'd his borrow'd visage, and betray'd

Him counterfeit, if any eye beheld. 115
 For heav'nly minds from such distempers foul
 Are ever clear. Whereof he soon aware,
 Each preturbation smooth'd with outward calm,
 Artificer of fraud; and was the first
 That practis'd falshood under faintly shew, 120
 Deep malice to conceal, couch'd with revenge:
 Yet not enough had practis'd to deceive
 Uriel once warn'd: whose eye pursu'd him down
 The way he went, and on th' Assyrian mount
 Saw him disfigur'd, more than could befall 125
 Spirit of happy sort: his gestures fierce
 He mark'd, and mad demeanor, then alone,
 As he suppos'd, all unobserv'd, unseen.
 So on he fares, and to the border comes
 * Of Eden, where delicious Paradise, 130
 Now nearer, crowns with her inclosure green,
 As with a rural mound, the champain head
 Of a steep wilderness, whose hairy sides
 With thicket overgrown, grotesque and wild,
 Access deny'd; and over head up grew 135
 Insuperable height of loftiest shade,
 Cedar, and pine, and fir, and branching palm,
 A sylvan scene, and as the ranks ascend
 Shade above shade, a woody theatre
 Of stateliest view. Yet higher than their tops 140
 The verd'rous wall of Paradise up sprung:
 Which to our gen'ral sire gave prospect large
 Into his nether empire neighb'ring round.
 And higher than that wall a circling row
 Of goodliest trees loaden with fairest fruit, 145

Book
 Bloffo
 Appea
 On wh
 Than o
 When
 That la
 Meets
 Vernal
 All sad
 Fannin
 Native
 Satan h
 But fur
 As one
 Of shr
 All pat
 One ga
 On th'
 Due ent
 High ov
 Lights o
 Whom
 Watchin
 In hurd
 Leaps o
 Thence
 The mid
 Sat like
 Thereby
 To them
 Of that

Blossoms and fruit at once, of golden hue,
Appear'd, with gay enamell'd colours mix'd :
On which the sun more glad impress'd his beams
Than on fair ev'ning cloud or humid bow,
When God had show'rd the earth ; so lovely seem'd 150
That landskip : and of pure now purer air
Meets his approach, and to the heart inspires
Vernal delight and joy, able to drive
All sadness but despair : now gentle gales
Fanning their odoriferous wings, dispense 155
Native perfumes. And now to th' ascent
Satan had journey'd on, pensive and slow ;
But further way found none, so thick intwin'd,
As one continu'd brake, the undergrowth
Of shrubs and tangling bushes had perplex'd 160
All path of man or beast that pass'd that way :
One gate there only was, and that look'd east
On th' other side : which when the arch-felon saw
Due entrance he disdain'd, and in contempt,
High over leap'd all bound and sheer within 165
Lights on his feet. As when a prowling wolf,
Whom hunger drives to seek new haunt for prey,
Watching where shepherds pen their flocks at eve
In hurdled cotes amid the field secure,
Leaps o'er the fence with ease into the fold. 170
Thence up he flew, and on the tree of life,
The middle tree and highest there that grew,
Sat like a cormorant ; yet not true life
Thereby regain'd, but sat devising death
To them who liv'd ; nor on the virtue thought 175
Of that life-giving plant, but only us'd

For prospect, what well us'd had been the pledge
 Of immortality. So little knows
 Any, but God alone, to value right
 The good before him, but perverts best things 180
 To worst abuse, or to their meanest use.
 Beneath him with new wonder now he views
 To all delight of human sense expos'd
 In narrow room Nature's whole wealth, yea more,
 A heav'n on earth : for blissful Paradise 185
 Of God the garden was, by him in th' east
 Of Eden planted ; Eden stretch'd her line
 From Auran eastward to the royal tow'rs
 Of great Seleucia : in this pleasant soil
 His far more pleasant garden God ordain'd 190
 Out of the fertile ground he caus'd to grow
 All trees of noblest kind for sight, smell, taste ;
 And all amid' them stood the tree of life,
 High eminent, blooming ambrosial fruit
 Of vegetable gold ; and next to life, 195
 Our death, the tree of knowledge, grew fast by,
 Knowledge of good, bought dear by knowing ill.
 Southward through Eden went a river large,
 Nor chang'd his course, but through the shaggy hill
 Pass'd underneath ingulf'd ; for God had thrown 200
 That mountain as his garden mould high rais'd
 Upon the rapid current, which through veins
 Of porous earth with kindly thirst up-drawn,
 Rose a fresh fountain, and with many a rill
 Water'd the garden : thence united fell 205
 Down the steep glade, and met the nether flood,
 Which from his darksome passage now appears,

And now
 Runs div
 And coun
 * But rat
 How from
 Rolling o
 With maz
 Ran necta
 Flow'rs,
 In beds an
 Pour'd for
 Both whe
 The open
 Imbrown
 A happy
 Groves w
 Others w
 Hung ami
 Betwixt t
 Grazing t
 Or palmy
 Of some i
 Flow'rs o
 Another f
 Of cool r
 Lays forth
 Luxuriant
 Down the
 (That to t
 Her crysta
 The birds

And now divided into four main streams,
Runs diverse, wand'ring many a famous realm
And country, whereof here needs no account ; 210

* But rather to tell how, if Art could tell,
How from the saphire fount the crisped brooks,
Rolling on orient pearl, and sands of gold,
With mazy error under pendant shades
Ran nectar, visiting each plant, and fed 215
Flow'rs, worthy' of Paradise, which not nice Art

In beds and curious knots, but Nature boon
Pour'd forth profuse, on hill, and dale, and plain,
Both where the morning sun first warmly smote
The open field, and where the unpierc'd shade 220
Imbrown'd the noontide bow'rs. Thus was this place

A happy rural seat of various view ;
Groves whose rich trees wept od'rous gums and balm,
Others whose fruit burnished with golden rind
Hung amiable, and of delicious taste : 225

Betwixt them lawns, or level downs, and flocks,
Grazing the tender herb, were interpos'd,
Or palmy hillock ; or the flow'ry lap
Of some irriguous valley spread her store,
Flow'rs of all hues, and without thorn the rose. 230

Another side, umbrageous grots and caves
Of cool recess, o'er which the mantling vine
Lays forth her purple grape, and gently creeps
Luxuriant ; mean while murm'ring waters fall
Down the slope hills, dispers'd, or in a lake, 235

(That to the fringed bank with myrtle crown'd
Her crystal mirror holds) unite their streams.
The birds their choir apply ; airs, vernal airs,

Breathing the smell of field and grove, attune
 The trembling leaves, while all the hours in dance 240
 Led on th' eternal spring. * Yet here the fiend
 Saw undelighted all delight, all kind
 Of living creatures new to sight, and strange.
 Two of far nobler shape, erect and tall,
 Godlike erect, with native honour clad 245
 In naked majesty, seem'd lords of all,
 And worthy seem'd; for in their looks divine
 The image of their glorious Maker shone,
 Truth, wisdom, sanctitude severe and pure,
 (Severe, but in true filial freedom plac'd) 250
 Whence true authority in men; though both
 Not equal, as their sex not equal seem'd;
 For contemplation he and valour form'd,
 For softness she and sweet attractive grace;
 He for God only, she for God in him. 255
 His fair large front and eye sublime declar'd
 Absolute rule; and hyacinthine locks
 Round from his parted forelock manly hung
 Clust'ring, but not beneath his shoulders abroad:
 She as a veil down to the slender waste 260
 Her unadorned golden tresses wore
 Dishevell'd, but in wanton ringlets wav'd
 As the vine curls her tendrils, which imply'd
 Subjection, but requir'd with gentle sway.*
 So pass'd they naked on, nor shunn'd the sight 265
 Of God or Angel, for they thought no ill:
 So hand in hand they pass'd, the loveliest pair
 That ever since in love's embraces met;
 Adam the goodliest man of men since born

Book
 His fo
 Under
 Stood
 They f
 Of the
 To rec
 More c
 More g
 Nectar
 Yields
 On the
 About
 Sportin
 Dandle
 Gambo
 To mak
 His lith
 Insinuat
 His bra
 Gave pr
 Couch'd
 Or bed
 Declin'd
 To th' o
 Of heav
 When S
 Scarce th
 * O h
 Into our
 Creature

Book. IV. PARADISE LOST. 97

His sons, the fairest of her daughters Eve. 270

Under a tuft of shade that on a green
 Stood whisp'ring soft, by a fresh fountain side
 They sat them down ; and after no more toil
 Of their sweet gard'ning labour than suffic'd
 To recommend cool Zephyr, and made ease 275
 More easy, wholsome thirst and appetite

More grateful, to their supper fruits they fell,
 Nectarine fruits, which the compliant boughs
 Yielded them, side-long as they sat recline
 On the soft downy bank damask'd with flow'rs, 360

About them frisking play'd all beasts of th' earth ;
 Sporting the lion ramp'd and in his paw
 Dandled the kid ; bears, tigers, ounces, pards,
 Gambol'd before them ; th' unwieldy elephant
 To make them mirth us'd all his might, and wreath'd 385

His lithe proboscis ; close the serpent fly
 Insinuating, wove with Gordian twine
 His braided train, and of his fatal guile
 Gave proof unheeded ; others on the grass
 Couch'd, and now fill'd with pasture gazing fat, 290
 Or bedward ruminating ; for the sun

Declin'd was hasting now with prone career
 To th' ocean isles, and in th' ascending scale
 Of heav'n the stars that usher ev'ning rose :
 When Satan still in gaze, as first he stood,
 Scarce thus at length fail'd speech recover'd sad. 295

* O hell ! what do mine eyes with grief behold !
 Into our room of bliss thus high advanc'd
 Creatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps,

Not Spirits, yet to heav'nly Spirits bright 300
 Little inferior; whom my thoughts pursue
 With wonder, and could love, so lively shines
 In them divine resemblance, and such grace
 The hand that form'd them on their shape hath pour'd.
 Ah gentle pair, ye little think how nigh 305
 Your change approaches, when all these delights
 Will vanish, and deliver you to woe,
 More woe, the more your taste is now of joy;
 Happy, but for so happy ill secur'd
 Long to continue, and this high seat your heav'n 310
 Ill fenc'd for heav'n to keep out such a foe
 As now is enter'd; yet no purpos'd foe
 To you, whom I could pity thus forlorn,
 Though I unpitied: League with you I seek,
 And mutual amity for freight, for close, 315
 That I with you must dwell, or you with me
 Henceforth; my dwelling happy may not please,
 Like this fair Paradise, your sense, yet such
 Accept your Maker's work; he gave it me,
 Which I as freely give; he'll shall unfold, 320
 To entertain you two, her widest gates,
 And send forth all her kings, there will be room,
 Not like these narrow limits, to receive
 Your num'rous offspring: If no better place,
 Thank him who puts me toath to this revenge 325
 On you, who wrong me not, for him who wrong'd.
 And should I at your harmless innocence
 Melt, as I do, yet public reason just,
 Honour and empire with revenge enlarg'd,
 By conqu'ring this new world, compels me now 330

To do

So

The ty

Then

Down

Of tho

Now o

Nearer

To mar

By wor

A lion

Then as

In some

Straight

His couc

Whence

Grip'd i

To first c

Turn'd h

* Sole

Dearer th

That mad

Be infin

As liberal

That rais'

In all this

Have noth

Ought wh

From us n

This one, t

To do what else, though damn'd I should abhor.

So spake the fiend, and with necessity,
The tyrant's plea, excus'd his devilish deeds.*
Then from his lofty stand on that high tree
Down he alights among the sportful herd
Of those four-footed kinds, himself now one,
Now other, as their shape serv'd best his end
Nearer to view his prey, and unesp'y'd
To mark what of their state he more might learn
By word or action mark'd : about them round
A lion now he stalks with fiery glare ;
Then as a tiger, who by chance hath spy'd
In some purlieu two gentle fawns at play,
Straight couches close, then rising changes oft'
His couchant watch, as one who chose his ground,
Whence rushing he might surest seize them both
Grip'd in each paw : when Adam, first of men,
To first of women Eve, thus moving speech,
Turn'd him all ear to hear new utt'rance flow.

336

340

344

* Sole partner, and sole part, of all these joys,
Dearer thyself than all ; needs must the Pow'r
That made us, and for us this ample world,
Be infinitely good, and of his good
As liberal and free as infinite ;
That rais'd us from the dust, and plac'd us here
In all this happiness, who at his hand
Have nothing merited, nor can perform
Ought whereof he hath need, he who requires
From us no other service than to keep
This one, this easy charge, of all the trees

350

354

360

In Paradise that bear delicious fruit
 So various, not to taste that only tree*
 Of knowledge, planted by the tree of life;
 So near grows death to life, whate'er death is,
 Some dreadful thing, no doubt; for well thou know'st 365
 God hath pronounc'd it death to taste that tree,
 The only sign of our obedience left

Among so many signs of pow'r and rule
 Conferr'd upon us, and dominion giv'n
 Over all other creatures that possess 370

Earth, air, and sea. Then let us not think hard
 One easy prohibition, who enjoy
 Free leave so large to all things else, and choice
 Unlimited of manifold delights:

But let us ever praise him, and extol 375
 His bounty, following our delightful task,
 To prune these growing plants, and tend these flow'rs,
 Which were it toilsome, yet with thee were sweet.

* To whom thus Eve reply'd. O thou for whom
 And from whom I was form'd, flesh of thy flesh, 380

And without whom am to no end, my guide
 And head, what thou hast said is just and right.

For we to him indeed all praises owe,
 And daily thanks; I chiefly who enjoy
 So far the happier lot, enjoying thee 385

Pre-eminent by so much odds, while thou
 Like consort to thyself canst no where find.

That day I oft' remember, when from sleep
 I first awak'd and found myself repos'd
 Under a shade on flow'rs, much wond'ring where 390
 And what I was, whence thither brought, and how.

Not distant far from thence a murmur'ing sound
Of waters issued from a cave, and spread
Into a liquid plain, then stood unmov'd
Pure as th' expanse of heav'n I thither went 395
With unexperienc'd thought, and laid me down
On the green bank, to look into the clear
Smooth lake, that to me seem'd another sky.
As I bent down to look, just opposite
A shape within the wat'ry gleam appear'd, 400
Bending to look on me : I started back,
It started back ; but pleas'd I soon return'd,
Pleas'd it return'd as soon with answer'ing looks
Of sympathy and love : there I had fix'd
Mine eyes till now, and pin'd with vain desire, 405
Had not a voice thus warn'd me, What thou seest,
What there thou seest, fair creature, is thyself ;
With thee it came and goes : but follow me,
And I will bring thee where no shadow stays
Thy coming, and thy soft embraces, he 410
Whose image thou art ; him thou shalt enjoy
Inseparably thine ; to him shalt bear
Multitudes like thyself, and thence be call'd
Mother of human race. What could I do,
But follow straight, invisibly thus led ? 415
Till I espy'd thee, fair indeed and tall,
Under a plantane ; yet methought less fair,
Less winning soft, less amiably mild,
Than that smooth wat'ry image : back I turn'd ;
Thou following cry'dst aloud, Return fair Eve. 420
Whom fly'st thou ? Whom thou fly'st, of him thou art,

His flesh, his bone ; to give thee being I lent

Out of my side to thee, nearest my heart

Substantial life, to have thee by my side

Henceforth an individual solace dear :

425

Part of my soul I seek thee, and thee claim

My other half. With that thy gentle hand

Seiz'd mine ; I yielded, and from that time see

How beauty is excell'd by manly grace

And wisdom, which alone is truly fair,

430

* So spake our gen'ral mother, and with eyes
Of conjugal attraction unprov'd,

And meek surrender, half embracing lean'd

On our first father ; half her swelling breast

Naked met his under the flowing gold

435

Of her loose tresses hid ; he in delight,

Both of her beauty, and submissive charms,

Smil'd with superior love, and press'd her lip

With kisses pure ; aside the devil turn'd

For envy, yet with jealous leer malign

440

Ey'd them askance, and to himself thus plain'd.*

Sight hateful, sight tormenting ! Thus these two
Imparadis'd in one another's arms,

The happier Eden, shall enjoy their fill

Of bliss on bliss ; while I to hell am thrust,

445

Where neither joy, nor love, but fierce desire,

(Among our other torments not the least,)

Still unfulfill'd with pain of longing pines.

Yet let me not forget what I have gain'd

From their own mouths : all is not theirs, it seems ;

450

One fatal tree there stands, of knowledge call'd,

Forbidden them to taste : Knowledge forbidden !

Book

Suspici

Envy

Can i

By ign

The pr

O fair

Their

With m

Envious

To keep

Equal w

They tak

But fir

This gar

Some wa

What fur

Yet happ

Short ple

So sayi

But with

Thro' woo

Mean whi

Against th

Levell'd h

Of alabaste

Conspicuo

Accessible

The rest w

Still as it ro

Betwixt th

Chief of th

Suspicious, reasonless. Why should their Lord
 Envy them that ? Can it be sin to know ?
 Can it be death ? And do they only stand 455

By ignorance ? Is that their happy state,
 The proof of their obedience, and their faith ?
 O fair foundation laid whereon to build
 Their ruin ! Hence I will excite their minds
 With more desire to know, and to reject 460

Envious commands, invented with design
 To keep them low whom knowledge might exalt
 Equal with Gods : aspiring to be such,
 They taste and die : what likelier can ensue ?
 But first with narrow search I must walk round 465

This garden ; chance may lead where I may meet
 Some wand'ring Spirit of heav'n, from him to draw
 What further would be learn'd. Live while ye may,
 Yet happy pair ! Enjoy, till I return,
 Short pleasures, for long woes are to succeed. 470

So saying, his proud step he scornful turn'd,
 But with sly circumspection, and began
 Thro' wood, thro' waste, o'er hill, o'er dale, his roam.
 Mean while the setting sun with right aspect

Against the eastern gate of Paradise 475
 Levell'd his ev'ning rays : it was a rock
 Of alabaster, pil'd up to the clouds,

Conspicuous far, winding with one ascent
 Accessible from earth, one ent'rance high ;
 The rest was craggy cliff, that overhung 480
 Still as it rose, impossible to climb.

Betwixt these rocky pillars Gabriel sat,
 Chief of th' angelic guards, awaiting night.

Thither came Uriel, gliding through the even
Swift as a shooting star, and thus began.

485

Gabriel, to thee thy course by lot hath giv'n
Charge and strict watch, that to this happy place
No evil thing approach, or enter in.

This day, at height of noon, came to my sphere
A Spirit, zealous, as he seem'd, to know

More of th' Almighty's works, and chiefly Man,
God's latest image: I describ'd his way

490

Bent all on speed, and mark'd his aery gate;
But in the mount that lies from Eden north,
Where he first lighted, soon discern'd his looks

Alien from heav'n, with passions foul obscur'd:

495

Mine eye pursu'd him still, but under shade

Lost sight of him: one of the banish'd crew,

I fear, hath ventur'd from the deep, to raise

New troubles; him thy care must be to find.

To whom the winged warrior thus return'd,

500

Uriel, no wonder if thy perfect sight,

Amid' the sun's bright circle, where thou sitt'st,

See far and wide: in at this gate none pass

The vigilance here plac'd, but such as come

Well known from heav'n: and since meridian hour

505

No creature thence: if Spirit of other sort,

So minded, have o'erleap'd these earthly bounds

On purpose, hard thou know'st it to exclude

Spiritual substance with corporeal bar.

But if within the circuit of these walks,

540

In whatsoever shape he lurk, of whom

Thou tell'st, by morrow dawning I shall know.

He spake; and Uriel to the sun return'd,

Book

*Arra

The c

Now c

Had in

Silence

They t

Were f

She all

Silence

With l

The sta

Rising

Appare

And o'

Whe

Of nigh

Mind u

Labour

Successi

Now fa

Our eye

Rove id

Man ha

Appoin

And the

While c

And of

To mor

With fir

And at c

Yon' flo

*Arraying with reflected purple and gold
The clouds that on his western throne attend.
Now came still ev'ning on, and twilight grey
Had in her sober liv'ry all things clad ;
Silence accompanied : for beast and bird,
They to their grassy couch, these to their nests
Were flunk, all but the wakeful nightingale ;
She all night long her am'rous descant sung ;
Silence was pleas'd : now glow'd the firmament
With living saphires : Hesperus, that led
The starry host, rode brightest, till the moon
Rising in clouded majesty, at length
Apparent queen unveil'd her peerless light,
And o'er the dark her silver mantle threw.

515

520

525

When Adam thus to Eve. Fair Consort, th' hour
Of night, and all things now retir'd to rest,
Mind us of like repose, since God hath set
Labour and rest, as day and night, to men
Successive ; and the timely dew of sleep
Now falling, with soft slumb'rous weight inclines
Our eye-lids : other creatures all day long
Rove idle unemploy'd, and less need rest ;
Man hath his daily work of body or mind
Appointed, which declares his dignity,
And the regard of heav'n on all his ways ;
While other animals unactive range,
And of their doings God takes no account.*
To morrow, ere fresh morning streak the east
With first approach of light, we must be ris'n,
And at our pleasant labour, to reform
Yon flow'ry arbours, yonder alleys green,

530

535

540

Our walk at noon, with branches overgrown, 545
Mean while, as Nature wills, night bids us rest.

* To whom thus Eve, with perfect beauty adorn'd.
My Author and Disposer, what thou bidst
Unargu'd I obey ; so God ordains.

With thee conversing, I forget all time ; 550
All seasons, and their change, all please alike.

Sweet is the breath of morn, her rising sweet,
With charm of earliest birds ; pleasant the sun,
When first on this delightful land he spreads
His orient beams, on herb, tree, fruit, and flow'r, 555

Glist'ring with dew : fragrant the fertile earth
After soft show'rs ; and sweet the coming on
Of grateful ev'ning mild ; then silent night,
With this her solemn bird, and this fair moon,
And these, the gems of heav'n, her starry train : 560

But neither breath of morn, when she ascends,
With charm of earliest birds ; nor rising sun
On this delightful land ; nor herb, fruit, flow'r,
Glist'ring with dew ; nor fragrance after show'rs ;
Nor grateful ev'ning mild : nor silent night, 565

With this her solemn bird, nor walk by moon,
Or glitt'ring star-light, without thee is sweet.*
But wherefore all night long shine these ? For whom
This glorious sight, when sleep hath shut all eyes ?

To whom our gen'ral ancestor reply'd. 570
Daughter of God and Man, accomplish'd Eve.
These have their course to finish round the earth,
By morrow ev'ning, and from land to land,
In order, though to nations yet unborn,
Ministring light prepar'd, they set and rise : 575

Then not
That heav
Millions
Unseen, b
All these
Both day
Of echoin
Celestial
Sole, or m
Singing th
While th
With hea
In full ha
Divide t
Thus t
On to th
Chos'n b
All thin
Of thicke
Laurel a
Of firm
Acanthu
Fenc'd u
* Iris all
Rear'd
Mosaic
Crocus,
Broider
Of cost
Best, b
* T

Then not in vain ; * nor think, though men were none,
 That heav'n wou'd want spectators, God want praise :
 Millions of spiritual creatures walk the earth
 Unseen, both when we wake, and when we sleep :
 All these with ceaseless praise his works behold 580
 Both day and night. * How often from the steep
 Of echoing hill or thicket have we heard
 Celestial voices to the midnight air,
 Sole, or responsive each to other's note,
 Singing their great Creator ? Oft' in bands 585
 While they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk
 With heav'nly touch of instrumental sounds,
 In full harmonic number join'd, their songs
 Divide the night, and lift our thoughts to heav'n
 Thus talking, hand in hand alone they pass'd 590
 On to their blissful bow'r ; it was a place
 Chos'n by the sov'reign Planter, when he fram'd
 All things to Man's delightful use ; the roof
 Of thickest covert was inwoven shade
 Laurel and myrtle, and what higher grow 595
 Of firm and fragrant leaf ; on either side
 Acanthus, and each od'rous bushy shrub
 Fenc'd up the verdant wall ; each beauteous flow'r,
 * Iris all hues, roses, and jessamine,
 Rear'd high their flourish'd heads between, and wrought
 Mosaic ; under foot the violet 600
 Crocus, and hyacinth with rich May
 Broider'd the ground, more colour'd than with stone
 Of costliest emblem : * other creature here,
 Beast, bird, insect, or worm, durst enter none. 605
 * Thus at their shady lodge arriv'd, both hood,

Both turn'd, and under open sky ador'd

The God that made both sky, air, earth, and heav'n,
Which they beheld, the moon's resplendent globe,
And starry pole : Thou also mad'st the night,
Maker omnipotent, and thou the day,

610

Which we in our appointed work employ'd
Have finish'd, happy in our mutual help,
And mutual love, the crown of all our blifs,*
Ordain'd by thee, and this delicious place

For us too large, where thy abundance wants
Partakers, and uncropt falls to the ground.

615

But thou hast promis'd from us two a race
To fill the earth, who shall with us extol
Thy goodness infinite, both when we wake,
And when we seek, as now, thy gift of sleep.

620

This said unanimous, and other rites
Observing none, but adoration pure,
Which God likes best, into their inmost bower
Handed they went ; and eas'd the putting off.
These troublesome disguises which we wear.

625

* Hail wedded love, mysterious law, true source
Of human offspring, sole propriety

In Paradise of all things common else.
By thee adult'rous lust was driv'n from men
Among the bestial herds to range ; by thee
Founded in reason, loyal, just and pure,
Relations dear, and all the charities

630

Of father, son, and brother first were known.
Far be it, that I should write thee sin or blame,
Or think thee unbefitting holiest place,
Perpetual fountain of domestic sweets,

635

Whose bed is undefil'd and chaste pronounc'd.
Present, or past, as saints or patriachs us'd.
Here love his golden shafts employs, here lights
His constant lamp, and waves his purple wings, 640
Reigns here and revels ; not in the bought smile
Of harlots, loveless, joyless, unindear'd,
Casual fruition ; nor in court amours,
Mix'd dance, or wanton mask, or midnight ball,
Or ferenade, which the starv'd lover sings 645
To his proud fair, best quitted with disdain.*
These lull'd by nightingales embracing slept,
And on their naked limbs the flow'ry roof
Show'rd roses, which the morn repair'd. Sleep on
Blest pair ; and O ye happiest, if ye seek 650
No happier state, and know to know no more.

Now had night measur'd with her shadowy cone
Half way up hill this vast sublunar vault,
And from their ivory port the Cherubim
Forth issuing at the accusom'd hour stood arm'd 655
To their night watches in warlike parade,
When Gabriel to his next in pow'r thus spake.

Uzziel, half these draw off, and coast the south
With strictest watch ; these other wheel the north ;
One circuit meets full west. As flame they part, 660
Half wheeling to the shield, half to the spear.
From these, two strong and subtle Spi'rits he call'd
That near him stood, and gave them thus in charge.

Ithuriel and Zephon, with winged speed
Search through this garden, leave unsearch'd no nook ; 665
But chiefly where those two fair creatures lodge,

Now laid perhaps asleep secure of harm.
 This evening from the sun's decline arriv'd
 Who tells of some infernal Spirit seen
 Hitherward bent (who could have thought ?) escap'd 670
 The bars of hell, on errand bad no doubt :
 Such where ye find, seize fast, and hither bring.

So saying, on he led his radiant files,
 Dazling the moon; these to the bow'r direct,
 In search of whom they fought : him there they found 675
 Squat like a toad, close at the ear of Eve,
 Assaying by his devilish art to reach
 The organs of her fancy, and with them forge
 Illusions as he list, phantasms and dreams.
 *Him thus intent Ithuriel with his spear
 Touch'd lightly ; for no falsehood can endure 680
 Touch of celestial temper, but returns
 Of force to its own likeness : up he starts
 Discover'd and surpriz'd. As when a spark
 Lights on a heap of nitreus powder, laid
 Fit for the tun some magazine to store 685
 Against a rumor'd war, the smutty grain
 With sudden blaze diffus'd inflames the air ;
 So started up in his own shape the fiend.
 Back slept those two fair angels half amaz'd
 So sudden to behold the grisly king ; 690
 Yet thus, unmov'd with fear, accost him soon.*

Which of those rebel Spirits adjudg'd to hell
 Com'st thou, escap'd thy prison ? and transform'd,
 Why sat'st thou like an enemy in wait,
 Here watching at the head of these that sleep ? 695
 Know ye not then, said Satan fill'd with scorn,

Know ye not me ? Ye knew me once no mate
 For you, there sitting where ye durst not fear :
 Not to know me argues yourselves unknown,
 The lowest of your throng : or if ye know, 700
 Why ask ye, and superfluous begin
 Your message, like to end as much in vain ?

To whom thus Zephon, answ'ring scorn with scorn.
 Think not, revolted Spi'rit, thy ~~shape~~ the same,
 Or brightness undiminish'd to be known, 705
 As when thou stood'st in heaven upright and pure ;
 That glory then, when thou no more wast good,
 Departed from thee ; and thou resemblest now
 Thy sin and place of doom obscure and foul.
 But come, for thou, be sure, shall give account 710
 To him who sent us, whose charge is to keep
 This place inviolate, and these from harm.

So spake the Cherub ; and his grave rebuke,
 *Severe in youthful beauty, added grace
 Invincible : abash'd the devil stood, 715
 And felt how awful goodness is, and saw
 Virtue in her shape how lovely ; saw, and pin'd
 His loss ; but chiefly to find here observ'd 720
 His lustre visibly impair'd ; *yet seem'd
 Undaunted. If I must contend, said he,
 Best with the best, the sender not the sent,
 Or all at once ; more glory will be won,
 Or less be lost. Thy fear, said Zephon hold, 725
 Will save us trial what the least can do
 Single against thee wicked, and thence weak.

* The fiend reply'd not, overcome with rage ;

But like a proud steed rein'd, went haughty on,
 Champing his iron curb : to strive or fly 720
 He held it vain : awe from above had quell'd
 His heart, not else dismay'd.* Now drew they nigh
 The western point, where those half-rounding guards
 Just met, and closing stood in squadron join'd,
 Awaiting next command. To whom their chief 735
 Gabriel from the front thus call'd aloud.

O friends, I hear the tread of nimble feet
 Hastening this way, and now by glimpse discern
 Ithuriel and Zephon through the shade,
 And with them comes a third of regal port, 740
 But faded splendor wan ; who by his gate
 And fierce demeanor seems the prince of hell,
 Not likely to part hence without contest ;
 Stand firm, for in his look defiance lours.

He scarce had ended, when those two approach'd, 745
 And brief related whom they brought, where found,
 How busied, in what form and posture couch'd.

To whom with stern regard thus Gabriel spake
 Why hast thou, Satan, broke the bounds prescrib'd
 To thy transgressions, and disturb'd the charge 750
 Of others, who approve not to transgress
 By thy example, but have pow'r and right
 To question thy bold entrance on this place ;
 Employ'd it seems to violate sleep, and those
 Whose dwelling God hath planted here in bliss ? 755

To whom thus Satan with contemptuous brow.
 Gabriel, thou hadst in heav'n th' esteem of wise,
 And such I held thee ; but this question ask'd
 Puts me in doubt. Lives there who loves his pain ?*

Who would not, finding way, break loose from hell, 760

Though thither doom'd ? Thou would thyself, no doubt,

And boldly venture to whatever place

Farthest from pain, where thou might'st hope to change

Torment with ease, and soonest recompense

Dole with delight, which in this place I fought ; 765

To thee no reason, who know'st only good,

But evil hast not try'd : and wilt object

His will who bounds us ? Let him surer bar

His iron gates, if he intends our stay

In that dark durance: thus much what was ask'd. 770

The rest is true, they found me where they say ;

But that implies not violence or harm.

Thus he in scorn. The warlike angel mov'd,
Disdainfully half smiling thus reply'd.

O loss of one in heav'n to judge of wise, 775

Since Satan fell, whom folly overthrew,

And now returns him from his prison scap'd,

Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wise

Or not, who ask, what boldness brought him hither

Unlicenc'd from his bounds in hell prescrib'd ; 780

So wise he judges it to fly from pain

However, and to scape his punishment.

So judge thou still, presumptuous, till the wrath,

Which thou incurr'st by flying, meet thy flight

Sevenfold, and scourge that wisdom back to hell, 785

Which taught thee yet no better, that no pain

Can equal anger infinite provok'd.

But wherefore thou alone ? Wherefore with thee

Came not all hell broke loose ? Is pain to them

Less pain, less to be fled ? Or thou than they 790
 Less hardy to indure ? Courageous Chief !
 The first in flight from pain, hadst thou alledg'd
 To thy deserted host this cause of flight,
 Thou surely hadst not come sole fugitive.
 To which the fiend thus answer'd frowning stern. 795
 Not that I less indure, or shrink, from pain,
 Insulting angel ; well thou know'st I stood
 Thy fiercest, when in battle to thy aid
 The blasting vollied thunder made all speed,
 And seconded thy else not dreaded spear. 800
 But still thy words at random, as before,
 Argue thy inexperience what behoves
 From hard assays and ill successes past
 A faithful leader, not to hazard all
 Through ways of danger by himself untry'd : 805
 I therefore, I alone first undertook
 To wing the desolate abyfs, and spy
 This new created world, whereof in hell
 Fame is not silent, here in hope to find
 Better abode, and my afflicted Powers 810
 To settle here on earth, or in mid air ;
 Though for possession put to try once more
 What thou and thy gay legions dare against ;
 Whose easier business were to serve their Lord
 High up in heav'n, with songs to hymn his throne, 815
 And practiced distances to cringe, not fight.
 To whom the warrior angel soon reply'd.
 To say and straight unsay, pretending first
 Wise to fly pain, professing next the spy,
 Argues no leader but a liar trac'd, 820

Book
 Satan
 O fac
 Faith
 Arm
 Was
 Your
 Alleg
 And
 Patro
 Once
 Heav
 To c
 But
 Fly t
 Wit
 Bac
 And
 The
 So
 Gav
 T
 Pro
 Far
 Fro
 Rid
 Us
 In
 *
 Tun
 The
 Wi
 Of

Satan, and couldst thou faithful add ? O name,

O sacred name of faithfulness profan'd !

Faithful to whom ? To thy rebellious crew ?

Army of fiends, fit body to fit head.

Was this your discipline and faith engaged,

825

Your military obedience, to dissolve

Allegiance to th' acknowledg'd Pow'r supreme ?

And thou, fly hypocrite, who now wouldst seem

Patron of liberty, who more than thou

Once fawn'd, and cring'd, and servilely ador'd

830

Heav'n's awful monarch ? Wherefore but in hope

To dispossess him, and thyself to reign ?

But mark what I arreed thee now, Avant ;

Fly thither whence thou fled'st : if from this hour

Within these hallow'd limits thou appear,

835

Back to th' infernal pit I drag thee chain'd,

And seal thee so, as henceforth not to scorn

The facil gates of hell too slightly barr'd.

So threaten'd he : but Satan to no threats

Gave heed, but waxing more in rage reply'd.

840

Then when I am thy captive, talk of chains,

Proud liminary Cherub, but ere then

Far heavier load thyself expect to feel

From my prevailing arm, though heav'n's king

Ride on thy wings, and thou with thy compeers,

845

Us'd to the yoke, draw his triumphant wheels

In progress through the road of heav'n star-pav'd.

* While thus he spake, th' angelic squadron bright

Turn'd fiery red, sharp'ning in mooned horns

Their phalanx, and began to hem him round

850

With ported spears, as thick as when a field

Of Ceres ripe for harvest waving bends

Her bearded grove of ears, which way the wind
Sways them. On th' other side Satan alarm'd
Collecting all his might dilated stood, 865

Like Teneriff or Atlas unremov'd
His stature reach'd the sky, and on his crest
Sat horror plum'd ; nor wanted in his grasp
What seem'd both spear and shield : now dreadful deeds
Might have ensued, not only Paradise 860

In this commotion, but the starry cope
Of heav'n perhaps, or all the elements
At least had gone to wreck, disturb'd and torn
With violence of this conflict, had not soon
Th' Eternal to prevent such horrid fray 865

Hung forth in heav'n his golden scales, yet seen
Betwixt Aftrea and the Scorpion sign :
Wherein all things created first he weigh'd,
The pendulous round earth with balanc'd air,
In counterpoise, now ponders all events, 870

Battles and realms : in these he put two weights
The sequel each of parting and of fight ;
The latter quick up flew, and kick'd the beam ;
Which Gabriel spying, thus bespake the fiend.

*Satan, I know thy strength, and thou know'st mine, 875
Neither our own but giv'n ; what folly then
To boast what arms can do ? Since thine no more
Than heav'n permits, nor mine, though doubled now
To trample thee as mire : for proof look up,
And read thy lot in yon celestial sign, 880

Where thou art weigh'd, and shown how light, how weak,
If thou resist. The fiend look'd up, and knew
His mounted scale aloft : nor more ; but fled
Murm'ring, and with him fled the shades of night.



Notes on PARADISE LOST.

B O O K IV.

Ver. 2. *The Apocalypse*.—The Revelation, chap. 12. ver.

10, 12.

Ver. 28. *Meridian*.—Midday.

Ver. 48. *'Sdain'd*.—Disdained.

Ver. 70. *Rucs*.—Repents.

Ver. 85. *Abride*.—Suffer for.

Ver. 113. *Ire*—Anger.

Ver. 118. *Perturbation*.—Violent passion.

Ver. 124. *The Assyrian Mount*.—Niphates borders on *Assyria*, in which Milton supposes Paradise to have been.

Ver. 132. *A rural Mound*.—Such a Fence as is used in the Country-*Champaign*.—Even, level.

Ver. 134. *Grotesque*—Irregular. *Verdurous*.—Green.

Ver. 143. *His nether Empire, neighbouring round*.—Beginning at the foot of the Mount of Paradise.

Ver. 149. *Humid Bow*.—The Rainbow.

- Ver. 155. *Odoriferous*.—Bringing sweet Smells.
 Ver. 156. *Native Perfumes*.—Not made by Art.
 Ver. 165. *Prowling*.—Ranging about for prey.
 Ver. 212. *Crisped*.—Curling, winding.
 Ver. 212. *Sapphire*.—Of the colour of a Sapphire.
 Ver. 213. *Orient*.—Beautiful.
 Ver. 215. *Ran Nectar*.—Delicious, as the Nectar which the Poets feigned to be the Drink of the Gods.
 Ver. 217. *Boon*.—Good, bountiful.
 Ver. 229. *Irriguous*.—Well-watered.
 Ver. 231. *Umbrögrous*.—Shady, *Of all hues*.—Of every Colour.
 Ver. 232. *Mantling*.—Covering over, as with a Mantle.
 Ver. 238. *Airs*.—Gales of Wind.
 Ver. 250. *Severe*.—Exact, strict.
 Ver. 257. *Hyacinthine*.—Raven-black.
 Ver. 269. *The goodliest Man of Men since born*.—That is, Goodlier than any of them.
 Ver. 275. *Cool Zephyr*.—The cooling Breeze of wind.
 Ver. 280. *Damasked*.—Varied like Damask.
 Ver. 286. *His lithe Proboseis*.—His limber, pliant Trunk.
 Ver. 287. *Insinuating*.—Wrapping, winding himself up.
 Wove with Gordian Twine.—Alluding to the famous Gordian Knot, placed in the Temple of *Apollo*, by *Gordius*, King of *Phrygia*. None could untie this, but *Alexander* cut it asunder with his Sword.
 Ver. 288. *Braided*.—Plaited, folded. And those intricate folds were a token of Guile.
 Ver. 291. *Ruminating*.—Chewing the Cud.
 Ver. 293. *In the ascending Scale*.—As in a pair of scales, when one descends, the other ascends.

Ver. 350. *Sole part*.—That part of them which alone is dearer than all the rest.

Ver. 375. *The expanse*.—This is the proper sense of the word which we render *Firmament*. Any thing spread out.

Ver. 417. *A Plantane*.—A plane-tree, a very broad leaved Tree.

Ver. 425. *An individual Solace*.—A comfort nearer to be divided from me.

Ver. 441. *Plain'd*.—Complained.

Ver. 491. *I described*.—That is, pointed out *his way* to Paradise.

Ver. 495. *Alien from heaven*.—Nothing related to it.

Ver. 523. *Living Sapphires*.—Stars glittering like precious stones, and seeming as it were alive.

Ver. 523. *Hesperous*.—The evening star : *Venus*.

Ver. 555. *Orient*.—Rising.

Ver. 560. *Gems*.—Bright as precious stones.

Ver. 584. *Responsive*.—Answering.

Ver. 589. *Divide the Night*.—Into watches, relieving one another.

Ver. 601. *Mosaic Pavement* is chequered with small inlaid stones, of various Colours.

Ver. 609. *Resplendent*.—Bright, shining.

Ver. 626. *Mysterious Law*.—Containing a deep meaning, which few understand.

Ver. 632. *Charities*.—Love, Tenderness, Endearments.

Ver. 644. *A Serenade*.—A song sung at night, by a lover under the window of his Mistress.

Ver. 651. *If ye know to know nō more*.—If ye are content with your present Knowledge.

Ver. 652. A *Cone* is a Figure round at the bottom, and lessening all the way till it ends in a point. Such is the Shadow of the Earth, which rises higher in the same degree as the Sun falls. Consequently at nine o'clock, this would have risen half way up the *Sublunary Vault*, that is, the part of the Heaven's which lies between the Earth and the Moon.

Ver. 654. This *Ivory Port* at the East-Gate of Paradise is not mentioned till now.

Ver. 661. *To the Shield*—The left : *the spear*.—The Right.

Ver. 663. *From the Sun's decline*.—Since noon.

Ver. 672. *Hither*.—To me, wherever I am.

Ver. 673. *Radiant*—Bright, glorious.

Ver. 674. *Direct*.—Their course.

Ver. 681. *Of celestial Temper*.—Of the spear which was tempered in Heaven.

Ver. 684. *Nitrous Powder*.—Gunpowder.

Ver. 690. *Grisly*.—Dreadful, deformed.

Ver. 712. *Inviolate*.—Unharmcd, unpolluted.

Ver. 740. *Port*—Mien, gesture.

Ver. 765. *Dole*.—Pain.

Ver. 802. *Argue thy inexperience*.—Shew thou hast not experienced what is the duty of Christ.

Ver. 816. *And to cringe at practised Distances*.—At the several distances to which you are accustomed.

Ver. 833. *Arreed*.—Direct, order.

Ver. 838. *Facil*.—Easy.

Ver. 842. *Limitary*.—Bounded in all thou dost.

Ver. 849. A *Phalanx* is a square body of Soldiers drawn up close together.

Ver. 851. *Ported Spears*.—Held slooping toward the Enemy.

Ver. 852. *Ceres*.—Corn.

Ver. 856. *Teneriff* is one of the highest Mountains in the World.

Ver. 857. *On his crest sat horror plumed*.—Was as it were the plume of his helmet.

Ver. 867. *His golden Scales*.—*Libra* or the Scales, is one of the twelve Signs, thro' which the Sun moves yearly, between *Astrea* (or *Virgo*) and the *Scorpion*. This also alludes to the Word spoken to *Belshazzar*, *Thou art weighed in the Ballance and found wanting*.



PARADISE LOST.

BOOK V.

THE ARGUMENT.

Morning approaches; Eve relates to Adam her troublesome dream.

He likes it not, yet comforts her. They come forth to their day labours: their morning hymn at the door of their bower. God, sends Raphael to admonish man of his obedience, of his free estate, of his enemy near at hand, who he is, and why his enemy, and whatever else may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to Paradise. His appearance describ'd; his coming discern'd by Adam afar off, sitting at the door of his bower. He goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choicest fruits of Paradise, got together by Eve. Their discourse at table. Raphael performs his message; minds Adam of his state, and of his enemy; relates, at Adam's request, who that enemy is, and how he came to be so, beginning from his first revolt in heaven, and the occasion thereof: how he drew his legions after him to the parts of the north, and there inticed them to rebel with him, persuading all but only Abdiel, a Seraph; who, in argument, dissuades and opposes him, then forsakes him.

NOW morn her rosy steps in th' eastern clime
 Advancing, sow'd the earth with orient pearl,
 When Adam wak'd, so custom'd, from his sleep
 Was airy light, from pure digestion bred,
 And temp'rate vapours bland, which th' only sound

Of leaves and fuming rills, Aurora's fan,
Lightly dispers'd, and the shrill matin song
Of birds on ev'ry bough. So much the more
His wonder was to find unawaken'd Eve
With tresses discompos'd, and glowing cheek, 10
*As through unquiet rest; he on his side
Leaning half rais'd, with looks of cordial love.
Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld
Beauty, which whether waking, or asleep,
Shot forth peculiar graces: then with voice 15
Mild, as when Zephyrus on Flora breathes,
Her hand soft touching, whisper'd thus. Awake,
My fairest, my espous'd, my latest found,
Heav'n's last best gift, my ever new delight.
Awake; the morning shines, and the fresh field 20
Calls us; we lose the prime, to mark how spring
Our tended plants, how blows the citron grove,
What drops the myrrh, and what the balmy reed,
How nature paints her colours, how the bee
Sits on the bloom extracting liquid sweet.* 25

Such whisp'ring wak'd her, but with startled eye
On Adam, whom embracing, thus she spake.

O sole in whom my thoughts find all repose,
My glory, my perfection, glad I see
Thy face, and morn return'd; for I this night 30
(Such night till this I never pass'd) have dream'd,
If dream'd, not as I oft' am wont, of thee,
Works of day past, or morrow's next design,
But of offence and trouble, which my mind
Knew never till this irksome night methought 35

Close at mine ear one call'd me forth to walk,
 With gentle voice, I thought it thine ; it said,
 *Why sleep'st thou, Eve ? Now is the pleasant time,
 The cool, the silent, save where silence yields
 To the night-warbling bird, that now awake, 40
 Tunes sweetest his love-labour'd song ; now reigns
 Full orb'd the moon, and with more pleasing light
 Shadowy sets off the face of things ; in vain,
 If none regard : heav'n wakes with all his eyes,
 Whom to behold but thee, Nature's desire ? 45
 In whose sight all things joy, with ravishment,
 Attracted by thy beauty still to gaze.*
 I rose as at thy call, but found thee not ;
 To find thee I directed then my walk :
 And on, methought, alone I pass'd through ways 50
 That brought me on a sudden to the tree
 Of interdicted knowledge ; fair it seem'd,
 Much fairer to my fancy than by day :
 And as I wond'ring look'd, beside it stood
 One shap'd and wing'd like one of those from heav'n 55
 By us oft' seen ; his dewy locks distill'd
 Ambrosia : on that tree he also gaz'd ;
 And, O fair plant, said he, with fruit surcharg'd,
 Deigns none to ease thy load, and taste thy sweet,
 Nor God, nor Man ? Is knowledge so despis'd ? 60
 Or envy, or what reserve forbids to taste ?
 Forbid who will, none shall from me withhold
 Longer thy offer'd good, why else set here ?
 This said, he paus'd not, but with vent'rous arm
 He pluck'd, he tasted ; me damp horror chill'd 65
 At such bold words vouch'd with a deed so bold :

But he thus overjoy'd, O fruit divine,
Sweet of thyself, but much more sweet thus crompt,
Forbidden here, it seems, as only fit
For Gods, yet able to make Gods of Men. 70
And why not Gods of men, since good, the more
Communicated, more abundant grows,
The author not impair'd, but honour'd more ?
Here, happy creature, fair, angelic Eve,
Partake thou also ; happy though thou art, 75
Happier thou may'st be, worthier canst not be :
Taste this, and be henceforth among the Gods
Thyself a Goddess, not to earth confin'd,
But sometimes in the air, as we, sometimes
Ascend to heav'n, by merit thine, and see 80
What life the Gods live there, and such live thou.
So saying, he drew nigh, and to me held,
Ev'n to my mouth of that same fruit held part
Which he had pluck'd ; the pleasant sav'ry smell
So quicken'd appetite, that I, methought, 85
Could not but taste. Forthwith up to the clouds
With him I flew, and underneath beheld
The earth outstretch'd immense, a prospect wide
And various : wond'ring at my flight and change
To this high exaltation ; suddenly 90
My guide was gone, and I, methought, sunk down,
And fell asleep : but O how glad I wak'd
To find this but a dream ! Thus Eve her night
Related, and thus Adam answer'd sad.
Best image of myself, and dearer half, 95
The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep

Affects me equally ; nor can I like
 This uncouth dream, of evil sprung I fear ;
 Yet evil, whence ? In thee can harbour none,
 Created pure. But know, that in the soul 100
 Are many lesser faculties, that serve
 Reason as chief ; among these fancy next
 Her office holds ; of all external things,
 Which the five watchful senses represent,
 She forms imaginations, airy shapes, 105
 Which reason joining or disjoining, frames
 All what we affirm or what deny, and call
 Our knowledge or opinion ; then retires
 Into her private cell when nature rests.
 Oft' in her absence mimic fancy wakes 110
 To imitate her ; but misjoining shapes,
 Wild work produces oft', and most in dreams,
 Ill matching words and deeds long past or late.
 Some such resemblances methinks I find
 Of our last ev'ning's talk, in this thy dream, 115
 But with addition strange ; yet be not sad.
 Evil into the mind of God or Man
 May come and go, so un approv'd, and leave
 No spot or blame behind : which gives me hope
 That what in sleep thou didst abhor to dream, 120
 Waking thou never wilt consent to do.
 Be not dishearten'd then, nor cloud those looks,
 That wont to be more chearful and serene
 Than when fair morning first smiles on the world :
 And let us to our fresh employments rise 125
 Among the groves, the fountains, and the flow'rs
 That open now their choicest bosom'd smells,

Reserv'd from night, and kept for thee in store.

* So chear'd he his fair spouse, and she was chear'd
But silently a gentle tear let fall 130

From either eye, and wip'd them with her hair;
Two other precious drops that ready stood,
Each in their crystal sluice, he ere they fell
Kiss'd, as the gracious signs of sweet remorse
And pious awe, that fear'd to have offended.* 135

So all was clear'd, and to the field they haste,
But first, from under shady arbo'rous roof
Soon as they forth were come to open sight
Of day-spring, and the sun, (who scarce up ris'n,
With wheels yet hov'ring o'er the ocean brim, 140

Shot parallel to th' earth his dewy ray,
Discov'ring in wide landkip all the east
Of Paradise and Eden's happy plains,)
Lowly they bow'd adoring, and began
Their orisons, each morning duly paid 145

In various stile; for neither various stile
Nor holy rapture, wanted they to praise
Their Maker, in fit strains pronounc'd or sung
Unmeditated, such prompt eloquence
Flow'd from their lips, in prose or num'rous verse, 150

More tuneable than needed lute or harp
To add more sweetness; and they thus began.

* These are thy glorious works, Parent of good,
Almighty, thine this universal frame,
Thus wond'rous fair; thyself how wond'rous then! 155
To us invisible, or dimly seen

In these thy lowest works; yet these declare
Thy goodness beyond thought, and pow'r divine.
Speak ye who best can tell, ye sons of light, 160

Angels ; for ye behold him, and with songs
And choral symphonies, day without night,
Circle his throne rejoicing : ye in heav'n :
On earth join all ye creatures to extol
Him first, him last, him midst, and without end, 165
Fairest of stars, last in the train of night,
If better thou belong not to the dawn,
Sure pledge of day, that crown'st the smiling morn
With thy bright circlet, praise him in thy sphere,
While day arises, that sweet hour of prime. 170
Thou Sun, of this great world both eye and soul,
Acknowledge him thy greater, sound his praise
In thy eternal course, both when thou climb'st,
And when high noon hast gain'd, and when thou fall'st.
Moon, that now meet'st the orient sun, now fly'st, 175
And ye five other wand'ring fires that move
In mystic dance not without song, resound
His praise, who out of darkness call'd up light.
Air, and ye Elements, the eldest birth
Of Nature's womb, that in quaternion run 180
Perpetual circle, multiform ; and mix
And nourish all things ; let your ceaseless change
Vary to our great Maker still new praise.
Ye Mists and Exhalations that now rise
From hill or streaming lake, dusky or gray, 185
Till the sun paint your fleecy skirts with gold,
In honour to the world's great Author rise,
Whether to deck with clouds th' uncolour'd sky,
Or wet the thirsty earth with falling showers,
Rising or falling still advance his praise. 190
His praise ye winds, that from four quarters blow,

Book

Breath

With

Foun

Melod

Join v

That fi

Bear o

Ye tha

The ea

Witne

To hil

Made

Hail un

To giv

Have g

Disper

So p

Firm p

On to

Amon

Of fru

Their

With

Rapha

To tra

His ma

Rap

Satan f

Hath r

Conve

As ma

Breathe soft or loud ; and wave your tops, ye Pines,
With every plant, in sign of worship wave.

Fountains, and ye that warble as ye flow,
Melodious murmurs, warbling tune his praise.

195

Join voices all ye living Souls; ye Birds,
That singing up to heaven's gate ascend,
Bear on your wings and in your notes his praise.

Ye that in waters glide, and ye that walk
The earth, and stately tread, or lowly creep ;

200

Witness if I be silent, morn or even,
To hill, or valley, fountain or fresh shade
Made vocal by my song, and taught his praise.

Hail universal Lord, be bounteous still

To give us only good ; and if the night
Have gather'd ought of evil or conceal'd,

205

Disperse it, as now light dispels the dark *

So pray'd they innocent, and to their thoughts
Firm peace recover'd soon and wonted calm.

On to their morning's rural work they haste
Among sweet dews and flow'rs ; where any row
Of fruit-trees over-woody reach'd too far

210

Their pamper'd boughs. Them thus employ'd beheld
With pity heav'n's high king, and to him call'd

Raphael, the sociable Spirit, that deign'd
To travel with Tobias, and secur'd

215

His marriage with the sev'ntimes wedded maid.

Raphael, said he, thou hear'st what stir on earth
Satan from hell scap'd through the darksome gulf
Hath rais'd in Paradise. Go half this day

220

Converse with Adam. Such discourse bring on,
As may advise him of his happy state,

Happinefs in his pow'r left free to will,
 Left to his own free will, his will though free,
 Yet mutable; whence warn him to beware 225
 He fwerve not too fecure: tell him withal
 His danger, and from whom; what enemy,
 Late fall'n himfelf from heav'n, is plotting now
 The fall of others from like ftate of blifs.

So fpake th' eternal Father, and fulfill'd 230
 All juftice: nor delay'd the winged Saint
 After his charge receiv'd; but from among
 Thoufand celeftial Ardors, where he flood
 Veil'd with his gorgeous wings, up fpringing light
 Flew thro' the midft of heav'n; th' angelic quires, 235
 On each hand parting, to his fpeed gave way
 Through all th' empyreal road; till at the gate
 Of heav'n arriv'd, the gate felf-open'd wide
 On golden hinges turning, as by work
 Divine the fov'reign Architeft had fram'd. 240
 From hence, no cloud, or, to obftrudt his fight,
 Star interpos'd, however fmall he fees,
 Not unconform to other fhining globes,
 Earth and the gard'n of God, with cedars crown'd
 Above all hills. Down thither prone in flight 245
 He fpeeds, and through the vaft ethereal fky
 Sails between worlds and worlds, with fteddy wing.
 *At once on th' eaftern cliff of Paradife
 He lights, and to his proper fhape returns
 A Seraph wing'd; fix wings he wore, to fhade 250
 His lineaments divine; the pair that clad
 Each fhoulder broad, came mantling o'er his breaft
 With regal ornament; the middle pair

Book. V
 Girt lik
 Skirted l
 And col
 Shadow'
 Sky-tin
 And sho
 The circ
 Of angel
 And to h
 For on f
 Their gli
 Into the
 And flow
 A wilder
 Wanton'
 Her virg
 Wild abo
 Him thro
 Adam d
 Of his c
 Shot dow
 Earth's in
 And Eve
 For dinn
 True app
 Of nefta
 Berry or
 Haste
 Eaftward
 Comes th
 Ris'n on

Girt like a starry zone his waste, and round
 Skirted his loins and thighs with downy gold 255
 And colours dipt in heav'n; the third his feet
 Shadow'd from either heel with feather'd mail,
 Sky-tinctur'd grain. Like Maia's son he stood,
 And shook his plumes, that heav'nly fragrance fill'd
 The circuit wide.* Strait knew him all the bands 260
 Of angels under watch; and to his state,
 And to his message high in honour rise;
 For on some message high they guess'd him bound.
 Their glittering tents he pass'd, and now is come
 Into the blissful field, through groves of myrrh, 265
 And flow'ring odors, cassia, nard, and balm;
 A wilderness of sweets; for nature here
 Wanton'd as in her prime, and play'd at will
 Her virgin fancies, pouring forth more sweet,
 Wild above rule or art; enormous bliss. 270
 Him through the spicy forest onward come
 Adam discern'd, as in the door he sat
 Of his cool bow'r, while now the mounted sun
 Shot down direct his fervid rays to warm
 Earth's inmost womb, more warmth than Adam needs: 275
 And Eve within, due at her hour prepar'd
 For dinner savory fruits, of taste to please
 True appetite, and not disrelish thirst
 Of necta'rous draughts between, from milky stream,
 Berry or grape: to whom thus Adam call'd. 280
 Haste hither Eve, and worth thy sight behold
 Eastward among those trees, what glorious shape
 Comes this way moving; seems another morn
 Ris'n on mid-noon: some great behest from heaven

To us perhaps he brings, and will vouchsafe
 This day to be our guest. But go with speed,
 And what thy plenteous stores contain, bring forth.

To whom thus Eve. Adam, earth's hallow'd mold,
 Of God inspir'd, I from each bough and brake,
 Each plant and jucieft gourd, will pluck such choice
 To entertain our angel' guest, as he
 Beholding shall confess, that here on earth
 God hath dispens'd his bounties as in heaven.
 So saying, with dispatchful looks in haste
 She turns, on hospitable thoughts intent.

Mean while our primitive great fire, to meet
 His God-like guest, walks forth, with no more train
 Accompanied than with his own complete
 Perfections; in himself was all his state,
 More solemn than the tedious pomp that waits
 On princes, than their rich retinue long
 Of horses led, and grooms besmear'd with gold.
 Nearer his presence Adam though not aw'd,
 Yet with submissive approach and reverence meek,
 As to' a superior nature, bowing low,
 Thus said. Native of heav'n, for other place
 None can than heav'n such glorious shape contain;
 Since by descending from the thrones above,
 Those happy places thou hast deign'd a while
 To want, and honour these, vouchsafe with us
 Two only, who yet by sov'reign gift possess
 This spacious ground, in yonder shady bower
 To rest, and what the garden choicest bears
 To sit and taste, till this meridian heat
 Be over; and the sun more cool decline.

Boo
 W
 Adan
 Creat
 As m
 To vi
 O'erfl
 I have
 They o
 Stood
 She nee
 Alter'd
 Bestow
 Long a
 Hail M
 Shall fil
 Than w
 Have he
 Their tal
 And on
 All autu
 Danc'd f
 Our auth
 These bo
 All perfec
 To us for
 The earth
 To spiritu
 That one
 To whom
 Of life am

Whom thus th' angelic Virtue answer'd mild.
Adam, I therefore came, nor art thou such
Created, or such place hast here to dwell,
As may not oft invite, though Spi'rits of heaven
To visit thee; lead on then where thy bower 320
O'er shades; for these mid-hours, till evening rise,
I have at will. So to the sylvan lodge
They came, that smild with flow'rets deck'd, and Eve
Stood to' entertain her guest from heav'n; no veil
She needed, virtue proof; no thought infirm 325
Alter'd her cheek. On whom the Angel Hail
Bestow'd, the holy salutation us'd.
Long after to blest Mary, second Eve.
Hail Mother of Mankind, whose fruitful womb
Shall fill the world more numerous with thy sons, 330
Than with these various fruits the trees of God
Have heap'd this table. Rais'd of grassy turf
Their table was, and mossy seats had round,
And on her ample square from side to side
All autumn pil'd, though spring and autumn here 335
Danc'd sweetly hand in hand, when thus began
Our author. Heav'nly stranger, please to taste
These bounties, which our Nourisher, from whom
All perfect good, unmeasur'd out, descends,
To us for food and for delight hath caus'd 340
The earth to yield; unsavory food perhaps
To spiritual natures; only this I know,
That one celestial Father gives to all.
To whom the angel. Though in heav'n the trees
Of life ambrosial fruitage bear, and vines 345

Yield nectar ; though from off the boughs each morn
 We brush mellifluous dew, and find the ground
 Cover'd with pearly grain : yet God hath here
 Varied his bounty so with new delights,
 As may compare with heaven. So down they sat, 350
 And to their viands fell ; The mean while Eve
 Minister'd naked, and their flowing cups
 With pleasant liquors crown : O innocence
 Deserving paradise ! If ever, then,
 Then had the sons of God excuse to have been 355
 Enamour'd at that sight ; but in those hearts
 Love unlibidinous reign'd, nor jealousy
 Was understood, the injur'd lover's hell.

Thus when with meats and drinks they had suffic'd,
 Not burden'd nature, sudden mind arose 360
 In Adam, not to let th' occasion pass
 Giv'n him by this great conference to know
 Of things above this world, and of their being
 Who dwell in heaven, and his wary speech
 Thus to th' empyreal minister he fram'd. 365

Inhabitant with God, now know I well
 Thy favour, in this honour done to Man,
 Under whose lowly roof thou hast vouchsaf'd
 To enter, and these earthly fruits to taste.

To whom the winged Hierarch reply'd. 370
 O Adam, one Almighty is, from whom
 All things proceed, and up to him return,
 If not deprav'd from good, created all
 Such to perfection, one first matter all,
 Indued with various forms, various degrees 375
 Of substance, and in things that live, of life.

Wonder not then, what God for you saw good
If I refuse not. Time may come, when Men
With Angels may participate, and ascend

Ethereal, as we, or may at choice

380

Here or in heav'nly Paradises dwell ;

If ye be found obedient, and retain

Unalterably firm his love entire,

Whose progeny you are. Mean while enjoy

Your fill what happiness this happy state

385

Can comprehend, incapable of more.

To whom the patriarch of mankind reply'd.

O favourable Spi'rit, propitious guest,

What meant that caution join'd, If ye be found

Obedient ? Can we want obedience then

390

To him, or possibly his love desert

Who form'd us from the dust, and plac'd us here

Full to the utmost measure of what bliss

Human desires can seek or apprehend ?

To whom the angel. Son of heav'n and earth,

395

Attend : That thou art happy, owe to God ;

That thou continuest such, owe to thyself,

That is, to thy obedience ; therein stand.

This was that caution giv'n thee ; be advis'd.

* God made thee perfect, not immutable ;

400

And good he made thee, but to persevere

He left it in thy pow'r ; ordain'd thy will

By nature free, not over-rul'd by fate

Inextricable, or strict necessity :

Our voluntary service he requires,

405

Not our necessitated ; such with him

Finds no acceptance, nor can find ; for how
 Can hearts, not free, be try'd whether they serve
 Willing or no, who will but what they must ?
 Myself and all th' angelic host, that stand 410
 In sight of God enthron'd, our happy state
 Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds ;
 On other surety none ; freely we serve,
 Because we freely love, as in our will
 To love or not ; in this we stand or fall : * 415
 And some are fall'n, to disobedience fall'n,
 And so from heav'n to deepest hell ; O fall
 From what high state of blifs into what woe !

To whom our great progenitor. Thy words
 Attentive, and with more delighted ear, 420
 Divine instructor, I have heard, than when
 Cherubic songs by night from neighb'ring hills
 Aereal music sent : nor knew I not
 To be both will and deed created free ;
 Yet that we never shall forget to love 425
 Our Maker, and obey him whose command
 Single is yet so just, my constant thoughts
 Assur'd me, and still assure : though what thou tell'st
 Hath pass'd in heav'n, some doubt within me move,
 But more desire to hear, if thou consent, 430
 The full relation, which must needs be strange,
 Worthy in sacred silence to be heard.
 And we have yet large day, for scarce the sun
 Hath finish'd half his journey, and scarce begins
 His other half in the great round of heaven. 435

Thus Adam made request ; and Raphael
 After short pause assenting, thus began.

Hig
 Sad tal
 To hur
 Of war
 The ru
 And pe
 The sec
 Not lav
 This is
 Of hum
 By liker
 As may
 Be but t
 Each to
 As y
 Reign'd
 Upon he
 (For tim
 To moti
 By prese
 As heav'
 Of ange
 Innume
 Forthwit
 Under th
 Ten thou
 Stream i
 Of hieran
 Or in the
 Holy ma

High matter thou injoin'st me, O prime of men,
Sad task and hard ; for how shall I relate
To human sense th' invisible exploits 440
Of warring Spirits ? How without remorse
The ruin of so many, glorious once
And perfect while they stood ? How last unfold
The secrets of another world, perhaps
Not lawful to reveal ? Yet for thy good 445
This is dispens'd ; and what surmounts the reach
Of human sense, I shall delineate so,
By likening spiritual to corporeal forms,
As may express them best ; though what if earth
Be but the shadow of heav'n, and things therein 450
Each to' other like, more than on earth is thought ?
As yet this world was not, and Chaos wild
Reign'd where these heav'ns now roll, where earth now rests
Upon her center pois'd ; when on a day
(For time, though in eternity, apply'd 455
To motion, measures all things durable
By present, past, and future) on such day
As heav'n's great year brings forth, th' empyreal host
Of angels by imperial summons call'd,
Innumerable before th' Almighty's throne, 460
Forthwith from all the ends of heav'n appear'd
Under their Hierarchs in orders bright :
Ten thousand thousand ensigns high advanc'd,
Stream in the air, and for distinction serve
Of hierarchies, of orders, and degrees ; 465
Or in their glittering tissues bear emblaz'd
Holy memorials, acts of zeal and love

Recorded eminent. Thus when in orbs

Of circuit inexpressible they stood

Orb within orb, the Father infinite,

470

By whom in bliss imbosom'd sat the Son,

Amidst as from a flaming mount, whose top

Brightness had made invisible, thus spake.

Hear all ye angels, progeny of light,

Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers, 475

Hear my decree, which unrevok'd shall stand.

This day my only Son, I on this hill

Anointed have, your head I him appoint;

And by myself have sworn to him shall bow

All knees in heav'n, and shall confess him Lord.

480

So spake th' Omnipotent, and with his words

All seem'd well pleas'd; all seem'd, but were not all.

That day, as other solemn days, they spent

In song and dance about the sacred hill.

Now when ambrosial night with clouds exhal'd

585

From that high mount of God, whence light and shade

Spring forth, the face of brightest heav'n had chang'd

To grateful twilight (for night comes not there

In darker veil) and roseat dews dispos'd

All but th' unsleeping eyes of God to rest;

490

Wide over all the plain, and wider far

Than all this globous earth in plain outspread,

(Such are the courts of God) th' angelic throng,

Dispers'd in bands and files, their camp extend

By living streams among the trees of life,

495

Pavilions numberless, and sudden rear'd,

Celestial tabernacles, where they slept

Fann'd with cool winds; save those who in their course

Melodious

Alternate

Satan; so

Is heard no

If not the f

In favour a

With envy

Soon as mi

With all his

Unworshipt

Contemptu

Awak'ning,

Sleep'ft th

Thy eye-lid

Of yesterday

Of heav'n's

To utter is n

Of all those n

Tell them tha

Her shadowy

And all who

Homeward w

The quarters o

Fit entertainm

The great Mes

Who speedily

Intends to pass

So spake the

Bad influence

Of his associat

Or several onc

Melodious hymn about the sov'reign throne
Alternate all night long. But not so wak'd
Satan; so call him now, his former name

500

Is heard no more in heav'n. He of the first,

If not the first Arch-Angel, great in power,

In favour and pre-eminence, yet fraught

With envy against the Son of God, resolv'd

505

Soon as midnight brought on the dusky hour

With all his legions to dislodge, and leave

Unworshipt, unobey'd the throne supreme

Contemptuous, and his next subordinate

Awak'ning, thus to him in secret spake.

510

Sleep'st thou, Companion dear, what sleep can close

Thy eye-lids? And remember'st what decree

Of yesterday, so late hath pass'd the lips

Of heav'n's Almighty Sire? More in this place

To utter is not safe. Assemble thou

515

Of all those myriads which we lead, the chiefs:

Tell them that by command, ere yet dim night

Her shadowy cloud withdraws, I am to haste,

And all who under me their banners wave,

Homeward with flying march where we possess

520

The quarters of the north; there to prepare

Fit entertainment to receive our king

The great Messiah, and his new commands,

Who speedily through all the hierarchies

Intends to pass triumphant, and give laws.

525

So spake the false Arch-Angel, and infus'd

Bad influence into th' unwary breast

Of his associate: he together calls

Or several one by one, the regent Powers,

Under him regent ; tells, as he was taught, 530
 That the most High commanding, now ere night,
 Now ere dim night had disincumber'd heaven,
 The great hierarchal standard was to move ;
 Tells the suggested cause, and casts between
 Ambiguous words and jealousies, to sound 535
 Or taint integrity : but all obey'd
 The wonted signal, and superior voice
 Of their great potentate ; for great indeed
 His name, and high was his degree in heaven ;
 His count'nance, as the morning star that guides 540
 The starry flock, allur'd them, and his lies
 Drew after him the third part of heav'n's host.

Mean while th' eternal eye, whose sight discerns
 Abstrusest thoughts, Saw 'mong the sons of morn,
 What multitudes were banded to oppose 545
 His high decree, and to his Son thus said.

Son, thou in whom my glory I behold
 In full resplendence, Heir of all my might,
 Nearly it now concerns us to be sure
 Of our omnipotence, while such a foe 550
 Is rising, who intends to erect his throne
 Equal to ours, throughout the spacious north.

To whom the Son with calm aspect and clear,
 (Lightning divine, ineffable, serene,)
 Made answer. Mighty Father, thou thy foes 555
 Justly hast in derision, and secure
 Laugh'st at their vain designs and tumults vain.

So spake the Son ; but Satan with his Powers
 Far was advanc'd on winged speed, a host
 Innumerable as the stars of night, 560

Or stars o
 Impearls o
 Regions th
 Of Seraphim
 In their trip
 All thy don
 Than what
 And all the
 Stretch'd in
 At length in
 They came,
 High on a h
 Rais'd on a
 From diamo
 The palace o
 That structur
 Interpreted)
 Of counterfe
 Thrones, I
 If these mag
 Not merely t
 Another now
 All pow'r, an
 Of King anoi
 Of midnight
 This only to
 With what m
 Receive him
 Knee-tribute
 But what if b
 Our minds, a

Or stars of morning, dew-drops, which the sun
Impearls on every leaf and every flower.
Regions they pass'd, the mighty regencies
Of Seraphim and Potentates and Thrones
In their triple degrees; regions to which
All thy dominion, Adam, is no more
Than what this garden is to all the earth,
And all the sea, from one entire globe
Stretch'd into longitude; which having pass'd
At length into the limits of the north
They came, and Satan to his royal seat
High on a hill, far blazing, as a mount
Rais'd on a mount, with pyramids and towers
From diamond quarries hewn, and rocks of gold:
The palace of great Lucifer, (so call
That structure in the dialect of men
Interpreted) and with calumnious art
Of counterfeited truth thus held their ears.
Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,
If these magnificent titles yet remain
Not merely titular, since by decree
Another now hath to himself ingross'd
All pow'r, and us eclips'd under the name
Of King anointed, for whom all this haste
Of midnight march, and hurried meeting here,
This only to consult how we may best
With what may be devis'd of honours new
Receive him coming to receive from us
Knee-tribute yet unpaid, prostration vile.
But what if better counsels might erect
Our minds, and teach us to cast off this yoke?

565

570

575

580

485

590

Will ye submit your necks, and choose to bend
 The supple knee? Ye will not, if I trust
 To know you right, or if ye know yourselves
 Natives and sons of heav'n possess'd before
 By none. Who can in reason then assume
 Monarchy over such as live by right
 His equals, if in pow'r and splendor less,
 In freedom equal? Or can introduce
 Law and edict on us, who without law
 Err not? Much less for This to be our Lord!

593

Thus far his bold discourse without control
 Had audience, when among the Seraphim
 Abdiel, than whom none with more zeal ador'd
 The Deity, and divine commands obey'd,
 Stood up, and in a flame of zeal severe
 The current of his fury thus oppos'd.

605

O argument blasphemous, false and proud!
 Words which no ear ever to hear in heaven
 Expected, least of all from thee, Ingrate,
 In place thyself so high above thy peers.
 Canst thou condemn the just decree of God,
 That to his only Son by right indued
 With regal scepter, every soul in heaven
 Shall bend the knee, and in that honour due
 Confess him rightful King? Unjust, thou say'st,
 Flatly unjust, to bind with laws the free.
 Shalt thou give law to God? Shalt thou dispute
 With him the points of liberty, who made
 Thee what thou art, and form'd the Pow'rs of heaven
 Such as he pleas'd, and circumscrib'd their being?
 Yet by experience taught we know how good,

610

615

620

And of our g
 How provid
 To make us
 Our happy fl
 That equal o
 Thyself thou
 Or all angeli
 Equal to him
 As by his W
 All things, ev
 By him crea
 Crown'd the
 Thrones, Do
 Essential Pow
 And tempt n
 Th' incens'd
 While pardo
 So spake t
 None second
 Or singular a
 Th' Apostate
 That we w
 Doctrine wh
 When this c
 Thy making
 We know n
 Know none
 By our own
 Had circled
 Of this our m
 Our puissan

And of our good and of our dignity
 How provident he is, how far from thought
 To make us less, bent rather to exalt 625
 Our happy state. But grant it were unjust,
 That equal over equals monarch reign:
 Thyself though great and glorious do'st thou count,
 Or all angelic nature join'd in one,
 Equal to him begotten Son? By whom 630
 As by his Word the mighty Father made
 All things, ev'n thee; and all the Spi'rits of heaven
 By him created in their bright degrees,
 Crown'd them with glory, and to their glory nam'd
 Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers, 635
 Essential Powers. Cease then this impious rage,
 And tempt not these; but hasten to appease
 Th' incens'd Father, and th' incens'd Son,
 While pardon may be found in time besought.
 So spake the fervent angel; but his zeal 640
 None seconded, as out of season judg'd,
 Or singular and rash, whereat rejoic'd
 Th' Apostate, and more haughty thus reply'd.
 That we were form'd say'st thou? Strange point and new?
 Doctrine which we would know whence learn'd: who saw
 When this creation was? Remember'st thou 645
 Thy making, while the Maker gave thee being?
 We know no time when we were not as now;
 Know none before us, self-begot, self-rai'd
 By our own quick'ning pow'r, when fatal course 650
 Had circled his full orb, the birth mature
 Of this our native heav'n, ethereal sons.
 Our puissance is our own; our own right hand

Shall teach us highest deeds, by proof to try
 Who is our equal. Go, and this report,
 These tidings carry to th' anointed King;
 And fly, ere evil intercept thy flight.

* He said, and as the sound of waters deep
 Hoarse murmur echo'd to his words applause
 Through the infinite host. Nor less for that
 The flaming Seraph fearless, though alone
 Incompass'd round with foes, thus answer'd bold.*

O alienate from God, O Spi'rit accurs'd,
 Forsaken of all good; I see thy fall
 Determin'd, and thy hapless crew involv'd
 In this perfidious fraud, contagion spread
 Both of thy crime and punishment: henceforth
 No more be troubled how to quit the yoke
 Of God's Messiah; those indulgent laws
 Will not be now vouchsaf'd; other decrees
 Against thee are gone forth without recall;
 That golden scepter, which thou didst reject
 Is now an iron rod to bruise and break
 Thy disobedience. Well thou didst advise:
 Yet not for thy advice or threats I fly
 These wicked tents devote, but lest the wrath
 Impendent raging into sudden flame
 Distinguish not: for soon expect to feel
 His thunder on thy head, devouring fire.
 Then who created thee lamenting learn,
 When who can uncreate thee thou shalt know.

So spake the Seraph Abdiel faithful found
 * Among the faithless, faithful only he;
 Among innumerable false, unmov'd

Unshaken
 His loyalty
 Nor numb
 To swerve
 Though fir
 Long way
 Superior, n
 And with r
 On those p

655

660

665

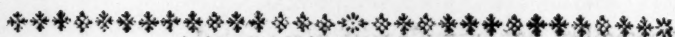
670

675

680

Unshaken, unſeduc'd, unterrify'd 685
His loyalty he kept, his love, his zeal;
Nor number, nor example with him wrought
To ſwerve from truth, or change his conſtant mind
Though ſingle. * From amidſt them forth he paſs'd,
Long way through hoſtile ſcorn, which he ſuſtain'd 690
Superior, nor of violence fear'd ought;
And with retorted ſcorn his back he turn'd
On thoſe proud tow'rs to ſwift deſtruction doom'd.

*



Notes on PARADISE LOST.

B O O K V.

- Ver. 2. *Orient pearl*.—Dew drops, shining like the
brightest pearls.
- Ver. 5. *Bland*.—Friendly to Nature.
- Ver. 6. *Aurora*.—The Morning.
- Ver. 7. *Mattin-Song*.—Morning-Song.
- Ver. 15. *Zephyrus*.—The West-wind, *on Flora breathes*.—
On the flowers. *The Prime*.—The first hour of the
Day.
- Ver. 35. *Irkfome*.—Troublesome.
- Ver. 52. *Interdicted*—Forbidden.
- Ver. 107. *Bosomed*.—Shut up in their bosoms.
- Ver. 118. *So it be unapproved*.
- Ver. 145. *Orisons*.—Prayers.
- Ver. 176. *Wandering fires*.—Planets. *Not without Song*.
—The Music of the Spheres was much talked of among
the ancient Philosophers.
- Ver. 181. *Quarternion*.—Fourfold.—*Multiform*.—In
Many forms.
- Ver. 203. *Made vocal*.—Made to speak.
- Ver. 213. *Pampered*.—Overgrown with leaves.

- Ver. 222. *Advise* — Make him sensible of.
- Ver. 225. *Mutable*. — Liable to change.
- Ver. 233 *Celestial Ardors*. — Angels burning with Love.
- Ver. 237. *The empyreal road*. — The heavens.
- Ver. 242. *No Star being interposed*,
- Ver. 245 *Prone*. — Bending forward.
- Ver. 247. *Between Worlds and Worlds*. — It is hard to say whether the Planets are inhabited or not. We have no Proof on either side.
- Ver. 249. *To his proper Shape returns*. — He stood on his feet, and replaced his Wings in their proper Situation.
- Ver. 254. *Zone*. — A Girdle
- Ver. 257. *With feathered Mail* — One feather coming a little short of the other, like the Plates on a Coat of Mail.
- Ver. 258. *Maia's Son*. — Mercury, supposed by the Heathens to be the Messenger of Jupiter, and pictured with wings at his Feet.
- Ver. 269 *Pouring forth what was the more sweet*, because *wild above all rule or art*.
- Ver. 272. *As in the Door he sat*. — Like Abraham, Gen. xviii. 1.
- Ver. 284. *Behest*. — Command.
- Ver. 313. *Meridian heat*. — Noontide Heat.
- Ver. 347. *Mellifluous*. — Honey Dews and pearly Grains. — Alluding to Manna, which is termed *Angels Food*, Psalm cv. 40.
- Ver. 351. *Viands*. — Victuals.
- Ver. 357. *Unlibidinous*. — Without Lust.
- Ver. 370. *Hierarch*. — Holy Prince or Governor.
- Ver. 374. *Such*. — Good to Perfection, perfectly good.

- Ver. 384. *Progeny*.—Offspring.
 Ver. 404. *Inextricable*.—From which none can extricate or free himself.
 Ver. 419. *Progenitor*.—Forefather.
 Ver. 441. *Remorse*.—Grief, Concern.
 Ver. 443. *Perfect*.—Without fault.
 Ver. 445. *Not lawful*.—Without a particular Leave.
 Ver. 381. See *Psalms* ii. 6, 7. *Heb.* i. 6.
 Ver. 385. *Exhaled*.—Breathed out.
 Ver. 489. *Roseat*.—Pleasant, fragrant as Roses.
 Ver. 500. *Alternate*.—Sing by turns.
 Ver. 529. *Regent*.—Bearing rule.
 Ver. 547. *Resplendence*.—Brightness.
 Ver. 554. *Lightning divine*.—Flashing divine Brightness.
 Ver. 561. *The Sun impearls*.—They shine like Pearls, as soon as the Sun shines upon them.
 Ver. 558. If it were from a globulous form, stretched out into one long Plain.
 Ver. 579. *Virtues*.—An Order of Angels, so called.
 Ver. 580. *Magnific*.—Grand, magnificent.
 Ver. 590. *Erect*.—Raise.
 Ver. 601. *Much less* can he introduce a Law for this (whom in Disdain he will not name) to be our Lord.
 Ver. 604. *Regal Sceptre*.—Royal authority.
 Ver. 621. *Circumscribed*.—Bounded, limited.
 Ver. 653. *Puissance*.—Strength.



Raphael
 sent for
 first fig
 night:
 in the
 some dis
 overwhe
 the tumu
 fish his
 victory:
 and cau
 his char
 mics, pu
 heaven;
 confusion
 the deep:

ALL nig
 Throu
 Wak'd by t
 Unbarr'd th
 Within the
 Where light

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK VI.

THE ARGUMENT.

Raphael continues to relate how Michael and Gabriel were sent forth to battle against Satan and his angels. The first fight described: Satan and his Powers retire under night: he calls a council, invents devilish engines, which in the second day's fight put Michael and his angels to some disorder; but they at length pulling up mountains overwhelm'd both the force and machines of Satan: Yet the tumult not so ending, God on the third day sends Messiah his Son, for whom he had reserv'd the glory of that victory: He in the power of his Father coming to the place, and causing all his legions to stand still on either side, with his chariot and thunder driving into the midst of his enemies, pursues them unable to resist towards the wall of heaven; which opening, they leap down with horror and confusion into the place of punishment prepar'd for them in the deep: Messiah returns with triumph to his Father.

ALL night the dreadless angel unpursued [morn,
Through heav'n's wide champain held his way; till
Wak'd by the circling hours, with rosy hand
Unbarr'd the gates of light.* There is a cave
Within the mount of God, fast by his throne,
Where light and darkness in perpetual round

Lodge and dislodge by turns, which makes through heaven
 Grateful vicissitude, like day and night;
 Light issues forth, and at the other door
 Obsequious darkness enters, till her hour 10
 To veil the heav'n, though darkness there might well
 Seem twilight here. And now went forth the morn
 Such as in highest heav'n,* when all the plain
 Cover'd with thick imbattel'd squadrons bright,
 Chariots and flaming arms, first met his view : 15
 War he perceiv'd, war in procinct, and found
 Already known what he for news had thought
 To have reported : gladly then he mix'd
 Among those friendly Pow'rs, who him receiv'd
 With joy and acclamations loud, that one, 20
 That of so many myriads fall'n, yet one
 Return'd not lost : On to the sacred hill
 They led him high applauded, and present
 Before the seat supreme ; from whence a voice
 From midst a golden cloud thus mild was heard. 25

* Servant of God, well done, well hast thou fought
 The better fight, who single hast maintain'd
 Against revolted multitudes the cause
 Of truth, in word mightier than they in arms ;
 And for the testimony of truth hast borne 30
 Universal reproach, far worse to bear
 Than violence ; for this was all thy care
 To stand approv'd in sight of God, though worlds
 Judg'd thee perverse : * the easier conquest now
 Remains thee, aided by this host of friends, 35
 Back on thy foes more glorious to return
 Than scorn'd thou didst depart, and to subdue
 By force, who reason for their law refuse.

Go, Michael
 And thou in
 Gabriel, lead
 Invincible, le
 By thousands
 Equal in num
 Rebellious ;
 Fearless assaul
 Pursuing driv
 Into their pla
 Of Tartarus,
 His fiery Cha
 So spake th
 To darken all
 In dusky wrea
 Of wrath awa
 Ethereal trum
 At which com
 That stood for
 Of union irresi
 In silence thei
 Of instrument
 Heroic ardor t
 Under their G
 Of God and hi
 Indissolubly fir
 Nor strait'ning
 Their perfect r
 Their march w
 Their nimble t
 Of birds, in or
 Came summon'

Go, Michael of celestial armies prince,
And thou in military prowess next 40
Gabriel, lead forth to battel these my sons
Invincible, lead forth my armed Saints
By thousands and by millions rang'd for fight,
Equal in number to that Godless crew
Rebellious; them with fire and hostile arms 45
Fearless assault, and to the brow of heaven
Pursuing drive them out from God and bliss
Into their place of punishment, the gulf
Of Tartarus, which ready opens wide
His fiery Chaos to receive their fall. 50
So spake the sov'reign voice, and clouds began
To darken all the hill, and smoke to roll
In dusky wreaths, reluctant flames, the sign
Of wrath awak'd, Nor with less dread the loud
Ethereal trumpet from on high 'gan blow : 55
At which command the Powers militant,
That stood for heav'n, in mighty quadrate join'd
Of union irresistible, mov'd on
In silence their bright legions, to the sound
Of instrumental harmony, that breath'd 60
Heroic ardor to adventurous deeds
Under their God-like leaders, in the cause
Of God and his Messiah. On they move
Indissolubly firm; nor obvious hill,
Nor strait'ning vale, nor wood, nor stream divides 65
Their perfect ranks; for high above the ground
Their march was, and the passive air upbore
Their nimble tread. As when the total kind
Of birds, in orderly array on wing,
Came summon'd over Eden to receive 70

Their names of thee; so over many a tract
 Of heav'n they march'd, and many a province wide
 Tenfold the length of this terrene: at last
 Far in th' horizon to the north appear'd
 From skirt to skirt a fiery region, stretch'd
 In battailous aspect, and nearer view
 Bristled with upright beams innumerable
 Of rigid spears, and helmets throng'd, and shields
 Various, with boastful argument portray'd,
 The banded Pow'rs of Satan hasting on
 With furious expedition; for they ween'd
 That self same day by fight, or by surprise,
 To win the mount of God, and on his throne
 To set the envier of his state, the proud
 Aspirer; but their thoughts prov'd fond and vain
 In the mid way: though strange to us it seem'd
 At first, that angel should with angel war
 And in fierce hosting meet, who wont to meet
 So oft in festivals of joy and love
 Unanimous, as sons of one great fire
 Hymning th' eternal Father: but the shout
 Of battle now began, and rushing sound
 Of onset ended soon each milder thought.
 High in the midst exalted as a God
 Th' Apostate in his sun-bright chariot sat,
 Idol of majesty divine, inclos'd
 With flaming Cherubim and golden shields;
 Then lighted from his gorgeous throne, for now
 Twixt host and host but narrow space was left,
 A dreadful interval, and front to front
 Presented stood in terrible array
 Of hideous length. Before the cloudy van,

On the rough
 Satan with vast
 Came tow'ring
 Abdiel that sig
 Among the mi
 And thus his o
 O heav'n! th
 Should yet rem
 Remain not: w
 There sail when
 Where boldest,
 His puissance,
 I mean to try,
 Unfound and fa
 That he who in
 Should win in an
 So pondering
 Forth stepping o
 His daring foe,
 Incens'd, and th
 Proud, art thou
 The height of thy
 The throne of G
 Abandon'd at the
 Or potent tongue
 Against th' Omni
 Who out of small
 Have rais'd incess
 Thy folly; or wit
 Reaching beyond
 Unaided could hav
 Thy legions under

the rough edge of battle ere it join'd,
 n with vast and haughty strides advanc'd
 he tow'ring, arm'd in adamant and gold;
 105 **105**
 liel that fight indur'd not, where he stood
 ong the mightiest, bent on highest deeds,
 thus his own undaunted heart explores.
 heav'n! that such resemblance of the Highest
 ould yet remain, where faith and realty
 110 **110**
 ain not: wherefore should not strength and might
 re fail where virtue fails, or weakest prove
 ere boldest, though to fight unconquerable?
 puissance, truiting in th' Almighty's aid,
 can to try, whose reason I have try'd
 115 **115**
 ound and false; nor is it ought but just,
 t he who in debate of truth hath won,
 ould win in arms, in both disputes alike.
 o pondering, and from his armed peers
 h stepping opposite, half way he met
 120 **120**
 daring foe, at this prevention more
 ns'd, and thus securely him defy'd.
 roud, art thou met? Thy hope was to have reach'd
 height of thy aspiring unoppos'd,
 throne of God unguarded, and his side
 125 **125**
 ndon'd at the terror of thy power
 otent tongue: fool, not to think how vain
 nst th' Omnipotent to rise in arms;
 o out of smallest things could without end
 e rais'd incessant armies to defeat
 130 **130**
 folly; or with solitary hand
 hing beyond all limit, at one blow
 ded could have finish'd thee, and whelm'd
 legions under darkness. But thou seest

5

10

15

*All are not of thy train; there be who faith
 Prefer, and piety to God, though then
 To thee not visible, when I alone
 Seem'd in thy world erroneous to dissent
 From all. My feet thou seest; now learn too late
 How few sometimes may know, when thousands err.* 140

Whom the grand foe with scornful eye askance
 Thus answer'd. Ill for thee, but in wish'd hour
 Of my revenge, first sought for thou return'st
 From flight, seditious angel, to receive
 Thy merited reward, the first assay
 Of this right hand provok'd, since first that tongue
 Inspir'd with contradiction durst oppose
 A third part of the Gods, in synod met
 Their deities to assert, who while they feel
 Vigor divine within them, can allow
 Omnipotence to none. But well thou com'st
 Before thy fellows: thy success shall shew
 Destruction to the rest: this pause between
 (Unanswer'd lest thou boast) to let thee know;
 At first I thought that liberty and heaven
 To heav'nly souls had been all one; but now
 I see that most through sloth had rather serve,
 Ministring Spi'rits train'd up in feast and song;
 Such hast thou arm'd, the minstrelsy of heaven,
 Servility with freedom to contend,
 As both their deeds compar'd this day shall prove,
 To whom in brief thus Abdiel stern reply'd.
 Apostate, still thou err'st, nor end wilt find,
 Of erring, from the path of truth remote.
 Unjustly thou deprav'st it with the name
 Of servitude to serve whom God ordains,

When he who
 Them whom
 To serve th' u
 Against his w
 Thyself not fre
 Yet lewdly da
 Reign thou in
 In heav'n God
 Behests obey,
 Yet chains in h
 From me retur
 This greeting
 * So saying
 Which hung n
 On the proud
 Nor motion o
 Such ruin inter
 He back recoi
 His massy spea
 Winds under
 Sidelong had p
 Half sunk with
 The rebel Thr
 Thus foil'd th
 Preface of vict
 Of battle: wh
 Th' Arch-Ang
 Founded, an
 Hosanna to the
 The adverse leg
 The horrid sho
 And clamour

When he who rules is worthiest, and excels
Them whom he governs. This is servitude,
To serve th' unwise, or him who hath rebell'd
Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee,
Thyself not free, but to thyself inthrall'd;
Yet lewdly dar'st our ministring upbraid.
Reign thou in hell thy kingdom; let me serve
In heav'n God ever blest, and his divine
Behests obey, worthiest to be obey'd.
Yet chains in hell, nor realms expect: mean while
From me return'd, as erst thou saidst, from flight,
This greeting on thy impious crest receive.

170

175

* So saying, a noble stroke he lifted high,
Which hung not, but so swift with tempest fell
On the proud crest of Satan, that no sight,
Nor motion of swift thought, less could his shield
Such ruin intercept: ten paces huge
He back recoil'd; the tenth on bended knee
His massy spear upstaid. As if on earth
Winds under ground, or waters forcing way
Sidelong had push'd a mountain from his seat
Half sunk with all his pines * Amazement seiz'd

180

185

The rebel Thrones, but greater rage to see
Thus foil'd their mightiest: ours joy fill'd, and shout
Preface of victory, and fierce desire
Of battle: whereat Michael bid sound
Th' Arch-Angel trumpet; through the vast of heaven
It sounded, and the faithful armies rung
Josanna to the Highest: nor stood at gaze
The adverse legions, nor less hideous join'd
The horrid shock. Now storming fury rose,
And clamour such as heard in heav'n till now

195

Was never: arms on armour clashing bray'd
 Horrible discord, and the madding wheels 200
 Of brazen chariots rag'd; * dire was the noise
 Of conflict; over head the dismal hiss
 Of fiery darts in flaming volleys flew,
 And flying vaulted either host with fire.
 So under fiery cope together rush'd 205
 Both battles main. with ruinous assault
 And inextinguishable rage; all heaven
 Refounded, and had earth been then, all earth
 Had to her centre shook. What wonder? when
 Millions of fierce encountring angels fought 210
 On either side, the least of whom could wield
 These elements, and arm him with the force
 Of all their regions: how much more of power
 Army against army numberless to raise
 Dreadful combustion warring, and disturb, 215
 Though not destroy, their happy native seat;
 Had not th' eternal King omnipotent
 From his strong hold of heav'n, high over-rul'd
 And limited their might; though in number such
 As each divided legion might have seem'd 220
 A numerous host, in strength each armed hand
 A legion: led in fight yet leader seem'd
 Each warrior single as in chief, expert
 When to advance, or stand, or turn the sway
 Of battle, open when, and when to close 225
 The ridges of grim war; * no thought of flight,
 None of retreat, no unbecoming deed.
 That argued fear; each on himself rely'd,
 As only in his arm the moment lay
 Of victory: deeds of eternal fame 230

Were done
 That war
 A standing
 Torment
 Conflicting
 The battle
 Prodigious
 Of fighting
 *Saw whe
 Squadrons
 Brandish'd
 Wide wast
 He hasten
 Of tenfold
 A vast circ
 The great A
 Surceas'd, a
 Intestine w
 Or captive
 And visage
 Author o
 Unnam'd in
 Heav'n's ble
 Misery, unce
 Of thy rebel
 Thy malice
 And faithful
 To trouble h
 From all her
 Brooks not th
 Hence then, (

Were done, but infinite ; for wide was spread
 That war and various, sometimes on firm ground
 A standing fight, then soaring on main wing
 Tormented all the air ; all air seem'd then
 Conflicting fire : long time in even scale 235

The battle hung ; till Satan, who that day
 Prodigious pow'r had shewn, amid the ranks
 Of fighting Seraphim confus'd, at length
 *Saw where the sword of Michael smote, and fell'd
 Squadrons at once ; with huge two handed sway 240

Brandish'd aloft the horrid edge came down
 Wide wasting ; such destruction to withstand
 He halted, and oppos'd the rocky orb
 Oftenfold adamant, his ample shield,
 A vast circumference : * At his approach 245

The great Arch-Angel from his warlike toil
 Surceas'd, and glad as hoping here to end
 Intestine war in heav'n, the arch-foe subdu'd
 Or captive dragg'd in chains, with hostile frown
 And visage all inflam'd first thus began. 250

Author of evil, unknown till thy revolt,
 Unnam'd in heaven, how hast thou disturb'd
 Heav'n's blessed peace, and into nature brought
 Misery, uncreated till the crime
 Of thy rebellion ? How hast thou instill'd 255

Thy malice into thousands, once upright
 And faithful now prov'd false ? But think not here
 To trouble holy rest : heav'n casts thee out
 From all her confines. Heav'n the seat of bliss
 Brooks not the works of violence and war. 260

Hence then, (and evil go with thee along,

Thy offspring,) to the place of evil, hell,
 Thou and thy wicked crew; there mingle broils,
 Ere this avenging sword begin thy doom,
 Or some more sudden vengeance wing'd from God 265
 Precipitate thee with augmented pain.

So spake the prince of angels; to whom thus
 The Adversary. Nor think thou with wind
 Of aery threats to awe whom yet with deeds
 Thou canst not. Hast thou turn'd the least of these 270
 To flight, or if to fall, but that they rise
 Unvanquish'd, easier to transact with me
 That thou shouldst hope, imperious, and with threats
 To chase me hence? Err not that so shall end
 The strife which thou call'st evil, but we stile 275
 The strife of glory; which we mean to win,
 Or turn this heav'n itself into the hell
 Thou fablest; here however to dwell free,
 If not to reign; Mean while thy utmost force,
 And join him nam'd Almighty to thy aid, 280
 I fly not, but have fought thee far and nigh.

They ended parle, and both address'd for fight
 Unspeakable; for who, though with the tongue
 Of angels, can relate? Or to what things
 Liken on earth conspicuous, that may lift 285
 Human imagination to such height
 Of Godlike pow'r? For likest Gods they seem'd,
 Stood they or mov'd, in stature, motion, arms,
 Fit to decide the empire of great heaven.
 *Now wav'd their fiery swords, and in the air 290
 Made horrid circles: two broad suns their shields
 Blaz'd opposite, while expectation stood
 In horror; from each hand with speed retir'd,

Where erst v
 And left large
 Of such com
 Great things
 Among the c
 Two planets
 Of fiercest op
 Should comba
 Together bot
 Up lifted imm
 That might d
 As not of pow
 In might or sw
 Of Michael fr
 Was given him
 Nor solid mig
 The sword of
 Descending, a
 But with swif
 All his right fi
 And with'd h
 The griding f
 Pass'd through
 Not long invin
 A stream of ne
 Sanguine, such
 And all his arm
 Forthwith on a
 By angels man
 Defence, while
 Back to his cha

Where erst was thickest fight, th' angelic throng,
 And left large field, unsafe within the wind
 Of such commotion; such as, to set forth
 Great things by small, if nature's concord broke,
 Among the constellations war were sprung,
 Two planets rushing from aspect malign
 Of fiercest opposition in mid sky
 Should combat, and their jarring spheres confound.
 Together both next to almighty arm
 Up lifted imminent; one stroke they aim'd
 That might determine, and not need repeat,
 As not of pow'r at once. Nor odds appear'd
 In might or swift prevention: but the sword
 Of Michael from the armoury of God
 Was given him temper'd so, that neither keen
 Nor solid might resist that edge: it met
 The sword of Satan with steep force to smite
 Descending, and in half cut sheer; nor stay'd,
 But with swift wheel reverse, deep entering shared
 All his right side: then Satan first knew pain,
 And writh'd him to and fro convolv'd; so fore
 The griding sword with discontinuous wound
 Pass'd through him: but th' ethereal substance clos'd,
 Not long invulnerable; and from the gash
 A stream of nect'rous humour issuing flow'd
 Sanguine, such as celestial Spirits may bleed,
 And all his armour stain'd ere while so bright.*
 Forthwith on all sides to his aid was run
 By angels many and strong, who interpos'd
 Defence, while others bore him on their shields
 Back to his chariot, where it stood retir'd

From off the files of war; there they him laid 325
 Gnashing for anguish and despite and shame,
 To find himself not matchless, and his pride
 Humbled by such rebuke, so far beneath
 His confidence to equal God in pow'r.
 *Yet soon he heal'd; for Spi'rits that live throughout 330
 Vital in every part, not as frail man
 In entrails, heart or head, liver or reins,
 Cannot but by annihilating die;
 Nor in their liquid texture mortal wound
 Receive, no more than can the fluid air : 335
 All heart they live, all head, all eye, all ear,
 All intellect, all sense; and as they please,
 They limb themselves, and colour, shape or size
 Assume, as likes them best, condense or rare.*
 Mean while in other parts like deeds deserv'd 340
 Memorial, where the might of Gabriel fought,
 And with fierce ensigns pierc'd the deep array
 Of Moloch furious king; who him defy'd,
 And at his chariot wheels to drag him bound
 Threaten'd, nor from the Holy One of Heaven 345
 Refrain'd his tongue blasphemous; but anon
 Down cloven to the waste, with shatter'd arms
 And uncouth pain fled bellowing. On each wing
 Uriel and Raphael his vaunting foe,
 Though huge, and in a rock of diamond arm'd, 350
 Vanquish'd Adramelech, and Asmodai,
 Two potent Thrones, that to be less than Gods
 Disdain'd, but meaner thoughts learn'd in their flight,
 Mangled with gashly wounds through plate and mail.
 Nor stood unmindful Abdiel to annoy 355
 The atheist crew, but with redoubled blow

Ariel and
 Of Ramiel
 I might re
 Eternize h
 Angels, co
 Seek not th
 Cancel'd fr
 Nameless i
 And nov
 With many
 Enter'd an
 With shive
 O'er-weari
 Defensive f
 Far otherw
 In cubic ph
 Invulnerabl
 Such high a
 Gave them
 Not to have
 Unwearied,
 By wound,
 Now nig
 Inducing da
 And silence
 Under herc
 Victor and v
 Michael and
 Incamping,
 Cherubic wa
 Satan with h
 Far in the da

Ariel and Arioch, and the violence
Of Ramiel scorch'd and blasted overthrew.

I might relate of thousands, and their names
Eternize here on earth ; but those elect 360

Angels, contented with their fame in heaven,
Seek not the praise of men : the other sort,
Cancel'd from heav'n and sacred memory,
Nameless in dark oblivion let them dwell.

And now their mightiest quell'd, the battle swerv'd, 365

With many an inroad gor'd : deformed rout
Enter'd and foul disorder ; all the ground
With shiver'd armour strown ; what stood, recoil'd
O'er-wearied, through the faint Satanic host
Defensive scarce, or with pale fear surpris'd. 370

Far otherwise th' inviolable Saints
In cubic phalanx firm advanc'd entire,
Invulnerable, impenetrably arm'd ;
Such high advantages their innocence
Gave them above their foes, not to have sinn'd, 375
Not to have disobey'd ; in fight they stood
Unwearied, unobnoxious to be pain'd
By wound, though from their place by violence mov'd.

Now night her course began, and over heaven
Inducing darkness, grateful truce impos'd, 380
And silence on the odious din of war.

Under her cloudy covert both retir'd,
Victor and vanquish'd : on the foughten field
Michael and his angels prevalent
Incamping, plac'd in guard their watches round, 385

Cherubic waving fires : on th' other part
Satan with his rebellious disappear'd,
Far in the dark dislodg'd ; and void of rest,

His potentates to council call'd by night ;
And in the midst thus undismay'd begun.

390

O now in danger try'd, now known in arms
Not to be overpow'r'd, Companions dear,
Found worthy not of liberty alone,

Too mean pretence, but what we more affect,
Honour, dominion, glory, and renown ;

Who have sustain'd one day in'doubt and fight
(And if one day, why not eternal days?)

395

What heaven's Lord had pow'rfullest to send
Against us from about his throne, and judg'd
Sufficient to subdue us to his will,

But proves not so: then fallible, it seems,

400

Of future we may deem him, though till now
Omniscient thought. True is, less firmly arm'd,
Some disadvantage we incur'd and pain,

Till now not known, but known as soon condemn'd;

Since now we find this our empyreal form

405

Incapable of mortal injury,

Imperishable, and though pierc'd with wound,

Soon closing, and by native vigour heal'd.

Of evil then so small as easy think

The remedy; perhaps more valid arms,

410

Weapons more violent, when next we meet,

May serve to better us, and worse our foes,

Or equal what between us made the odds,

In nature none: if other hidden cause

Left them superior, while we can preserve

415

Unhurt our minds and understanding sound,

Due search and consultation will disclose.

He sat; and in th' assembly next upstood

Nisroch, of Principalities the prime;

As one he

sore toil'd

And cloud

Deliver

Enjoyment

For Gods,

Against un

Against un

Ruin must

Valour or

Which all

Of mightie

Spare out o

But pain is

Of evils, a

All patient

With what

Our yet un

Ourselves v

No less tha

Wheretoe

Not uninv

Believ'ft fo

Which of u

Of this eth

This contin

With plant,

Whose eye

These thing

Deep under

Of spiritous

With heaven

Book VI. PARADISE LOST. 163

As one he stood escap'd from cruel fight,
420
sore toil'd, his riven arms to havock hewn,
And cloudy in aspect thus answ'ring spake.

Deliverer from new Lords, leader to free
Enjoyment of our right as Gods; yet hard
For Gods, and too unequal work we find,
425

Against unequal arms to fight in pain,
Against unpain'd, impassive; from which evil
Ruin must needs ensue; * for what avails

Valour or strength, though matchless, quell'd with pain
Which all subdues, and makes remiss the hands
Of mightiest? Sense of pleasure we may well
430

Spare out of life perhaps, and not repine,
But pain is perfect misery, the worst
Of evils, and excessive, overturns

All patience.* He who therefore can invent
435
With what more forcible we may offend
Our yet unwounded enemies, or arm

Ourselves with like defence, to me deserves
No less than for deliverance what we owe.

Whereto with look compos'd Satan reply'd.
440
Not uninvented that, which thou aright
Believ'st so main to our success, I bring.

Which of us who beholds the surface bright
Of this ethereous mould whereon we stand,
This continent of spacious heav'n, adorn'd
445

With plant, fruit, flow'r ambrosial, gems and gold;
Whose eye so superficially surveys
These things, as not to mind from whence they grow

Deep under ground, materials dark and crude,
Of spiritous and fiery spume, till touch'd
450
With heaven's ray, and temper'd they shoot forth.

So beautiful, opening to the ambient light
 These in their dark nativity the deep
 Shall yield us pregnant with infernal flame;
 Which into hollow engines long and round 455
 Thick ramm'd, at th' other bore with touch of fire.
 Dilated and infuriate, shall send forth
 From far with thund'ring noise among our foes,
 Such implements of mischief, as shall dash
 To pieces, and o'erwhelm whatever stands 460
 Adverse, that they shall fear we have disarm'd
 The Thund'rer of his only dreaded bolt.
 Nor long shall be our labour; yet ere dawn,
 Effect shall end our wish. Mean while revive;
 Abandon fear; to strength and counsel join'd 465
 Think nothing hard, much less to be despair'd.

He ended, and his words their drooping cheer
 Inlighten'd, and their languish'd hope reviv'd.
 Th' invention all admir'd, and each, how he
 To be th' inventor miss'd; so easy it seem'd 470
 Once found, which yet unfound most would have thought
 Impossible. Yet haply of thy race
 In future days, if malice should abound,
 Some one intent on mischief, or inspir'd
 With devilish machination, might devise 475
 Like instrument to plague the sons of men
 For sin, on-war and mutual slaughter bent.
 Forthwith from council to the work they flew;
 None arguing stood; innumerable hands
 Were ready; in a moment up they turn'd 480
 Wide the celestial soil, and saw beneath
 Th' originals of nature in their crude
 Conception; sulphurous and nitrous foam

They found
 To blacken
 Part hidden
 Entrails un
 Whereof to
 Of mislive
 Provide, pe
 So all ere d
 Secret they
 With silent
 Now wh
 Up rose the
 The matin t
 Of golden p
 Soon bander
 Look'd rou
 Each quarte
 Where lodg
 In motion o
 Under spre
 But firm ba
 Zophiel, of
 Came fly'ing
 Arm, Wa
 Whom fled
 This day; fe
 He comes, a
 Sad resolutio
 His adamant
 Fit w ll his
 Borne ev'n
 If I conjectu

They found, they mingled, and with art reduc'd
To blackest grain, and into store convey'd :

485

Part hidden veins digg'd up (nor hath this earth
Entrails unlike) of mineral and stone,

Whereof to found their engines and their balls

Of missive ruin ; part incentive reed

Provide, pernicious with one touch to fire.

490

So all ere day-spring, under conscious night,

Secret they finish'd, and in order set,

With silent circumspection unesp'y'd.

Now when fair morn orient in heav'n appear'd,

Up rose the victor angels, and to arms

495

The matin trumpet sung. In arms they stood

Of golden panoply, refulgent host,

Soon banded ; others from the dawning hills

Look'd round, and scouts each coast light-armed scour

Each quarter to descry the distant foe,

500

Where lodg'd, or whither fled, or if for fight,

In motion or in halt. Him soon they met

Under spread ensigns moving nigh, in flow

But firm battalion ; back with speediest sail

Zaphiel, of Cherubim the swiftest wing,

505

Came fly'ing, and in mid air aloud thus cry'd.

Arm, Warriors, arm for fight ; the foe at hand,

Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit

This day ; fear not his flight ; so thick a cloud

He comes, and settled in his face I see

510

Sad resolution and secure : let each

His adamant tin coat gird well, and each

Fit w ll his helm, gripe fast his orb'd shield,

Borne ev'n or high ; for this day will pour down,

If I conjecture ought, no drizzling shower,

515

But rattling storm of arrows barb'd with fire.

So warn'd he them aware themselves, and soon

In order, quit of all impediment,

Instant without disturb they took alarm,

And onward moved imbattel'd : when behold 520

Not distant far with heavy pace the foe

Approaching gross and huge, in hollow cube

Training his devilish engin'ry, impal'd

On every side with shadowing squadrons deep, 525

To hide the fraud. At interview both stood

A while ; but suddenly at head appear'd

Satan, and thus was heard commanding loud.

Vanguard, to right and left the front unfold

That all may see who hate us, how we seek

Peace and composure, and with open breast 530

Stand ready to receive them, if they like

Our overture, and turn not back perverse.

So scoffing in ambiguous words, he scarce

Had ended ; when to right and left the front

Divided, and to either flank retir'd, 535

Which to our eyes discover'd, new and strange,

A triple mounted row of pillars laid

On wheels, for like to pillars most they seem'd,

(Brass, iron, stony mould,) had not their mouths

With hideous orifice gap'd on us wide, 540

Portending hollow truce : at each behind

A Seraph stood, and in his hand a reed

Held waving tipt with fire ; while we suspense,

Collected stood within our thoughts amus'd.

Not long, sudden all at once their reeds 545

Put forth, and to a narrow vent apply'd

With nicest touch. Immediate in a flame,

But soon

From tho

Imbowel

And all h

Their dev

Of iron gl

Level'd w

That whor

Though st

By thousa

The sooner

Have easil

By quick

Foul dissip

Nor servicc

What shou

Repeated,

Doubled,

And to the

Stood rank

In posture

Of thunde

They wor

Stood scoff

All doubt

To match v

So easy', an

And all his

A while in

Rage prom

Against suc

*Forthwith

But soon obscur'd with smoke, all heav'n appear'd
From those deep-throated engines belch'd, whose roar
Imbowel'd with outrageous noise the air 550
And all her entrails tore, disgorging foul
Their devilish glut, chain'd thunderbolts and hail
Of iron globes; which on the victor host
Level'd with such impetuous fury smote,
That whom they hit, none on their feet might stand, 555
Though standing else as rocks, but down they fell
By thousands, angel on Arch-Angel roll'd;
The sooner for their arms; unarm'd they might
Have easily as Spi'its evaded swift
By quick contraction or remove; but now 560
Foul dissipation follow'd and forc'd rout.
Nor serv'd it to relax their ferried files.
What should they do? If on they rush'd, repulse
Repeated, and indecent overthrow
Doubled, would render them yet more despis'd, 565
And to their foes a laughter; for in view
Stood rank'd of Seraphim another row,
In posture to displode their second tire
Of thunder; back defeated to return
They worse abhorr'd. Satan and all his host 570
Stood scoffing, heighten'd in their thoughts beyond
All doubt of victory; eternal might
To match with their inventions they presum'd
So easy, and of his thunder made a scorn,
And all his host derided, while they stood 575
A while in trouble: but they stood not long;
Rage prompted them at length, and found them arms
Against such hellish mischief fit to' oppose.
Forthwith behold the excellence, the power,

Which God hath in his mighty angels plac'd) 580
 Their arms away they threw, and to the hills
 (For earth hath this variety from heaven
 Of pleasure situate in hill and dale)
 Light as the lightning glimpse they ran, they flew.
 From their foundations loosning to and fro 585
 They pluck'd the seated hills with all their load,
 Rocks, waters, woods, and by the shaggy tops
 Up-lifting bore them in their hands: Amaze,
 Be sure, and terror seis'd the rebel host,
 When coming towards them so dread they saw 790
 The bottom of the mountains upward turn'd ;
 Till on those cursed engines triple-row
 They saw them whelm'd, and all their confidence
 Under the weight of mountains buried deep ;
 Themselves invaded next, and on their heads 595
 Main promontories flung, which in the air
 Came shadowing, and oppress'd whole legions arm'd ;
 Their armour help'd their harm, crush'd in and bruise'd
 Into their substance pent, which wrought them pain
 Implacable, and many a dolorous groan, 600
 Long struggling underneath, ere they could wind
 Out of such pris'on, though Spi'rits of purest light,
 Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown.
 The rest in imitation to like arms
 Betook them, and the neighbor'ing hills upore ; 605
 So hills amid the air encounter'd hills
 Hurl'd to and fro with jaculation dire,
 That under ground they fought in dismal shade : *
 Infernal noise ; war seem'd a civil game
 To this uproar ; horrid confusion heap'd 610
 Upon confusion rose : and now all heaven

Book

Had g

Had no

Shrin'd

This tu

That hi

To hon

Upon hi

Th' affe

Effulg

Son in w

Visibly,

And in w

Second O

Two days

Since Mic

These diso

As likeliest

For to the

Equal in th

Two days a

For thee I h

Have suffer

Of ending t

Can end it,

Immenfe I h

In heav'n an

Go then thou

Ascend my c

That shake he

My bow and

Gird on, and

Had gone to wrack, with ruin overspread ;
 Had not th' almighty Father, where he sits
 Shrin'd in his sanctuary of heav'n foreseen
 This tumult, and permitted all, advis'd :
 That his great purpose he might so fulfil,
 To honour his anointed Son aveng'd
 Upon his enemies, whence to his Son
 Th' affessor of his throne he thus began.

615

Effulgence of my glory, Son belov'd,
 Son in whose face invifible is beheld

620

Vifibly, what by deity I am,
 And in whose hand what by decree I do,
 Second Omnipotence, two days are past,
 Two days, as we compute the days of heaven,
 Since Michael and his Pow'rs went forth to tame
 These difobedient : fore hath been their fight,
 As likeliest was, when two fuch foes met arm'd ;
 For to themselves I left them, and thou know'ft,
 Equal in their creation they were form'd.

625

630

Two days are therefore past, the third is thine ;
 For thee I have ordain'd it, and thus far
 Have suffer'd, that the glory may be thine
 Of ending this great war, fince none but Thou
 Can end it. Into thee fuch virtue' and grace
 Immenfe I have transfus'd, that all may know
 In heav'n and hell thy pow'r above compare.
 Go then thou Mightieft, in thy Father's might,
 Ascend my chariot, guide the rapid wheels
 That shake heav'n's basis, bring forth all my war,
 My bow and thunder, my almighty arms
 Gird on, and sword upon thy puiffant thigh ;

635

640

Pursue these sons of darkness, drive them out
 From all heav'n's bound into the utter deep;
 There let them learn, as likes them, to despise
 God and Messiah his anointed king. 645

He said, and on his Son with rays direct
 Shone full; he all his Father full express'd
 Ineffably into his face receiv'd;
 And thus the filial Godhead answer'ing spake. 650

O Father, O Supreme of heav'nly Thrones,
 First, Highest, Holiest, Best, thou always seek'st
 To glorify thy Son, I always thee,
 As is most just; this I my glory' account,
 My exaltation, and my whole delight. 655

Soon shall I clear all heav'n of these rebell'd,
 To their prepar'd ill mansion driven down,
 To chains of darkness. So said, he arose
 From the right hand of glory where he sat 660
 And the third sacred morn began to shine, [found

*Dawning through heav'n: forth rush'd with whirlwind
 The chariot of paternal Deity,
 Flashing thick flames, wheel within wheel undrawn,
 Itself instinct with Spirit, but convoy'd 665

By four Cherubic shapes; four faces each
 Had wondrous; as with stars their bodies all
 And wings were set with eyes, with eyes the wheels
 Of beril, and careering fires between.

Over their heads a crystal firmament, 670
 Whereon a sapphire throne, inlaid with pure
 Amber, and colours of the show'ry arch.
 He in celestial panoply all arm'd
 Of radiant Urim, work divinely wrought,
 Ascended; at his right hand victory 675

Sat eagle-winged ; beside him hung his bow
 And quiver with three-bolted thunder stor'd,
 And from about him fierce effusion roll'd
 Of smoke and bickering flame and sparkles dire :
 Attended with ten thousand thousand saints, 680
 He onward came, far off his coming shone ;
 And twenty thousand (I their number heard)
 Chariots of God, half on each hand were seen :
 He on the wings of Cherubs rode sublime
 On the crystalline sky, in saphire thron'd, 685
 Illustrious far and wide, but by his own
 First seen ; them unexpected joy surpris'd,
 When the great ensign of Messiah blaz'd
 Aloft by angels borne, his sign in heaven ; *
 Under whose conduct Michael soon reduc'd 690
 His army, circumfus'd on either wing,
 Under their head imbody'd all in one.
 *Before him pow'r divine his way prepar'd.
 At his command th' uprooted hills retir'd
 Each to his place ; they heard his voice, and went 695
 Obsequious ; heav'n his wonted face renew'd,
 And with fresh flow'rets hill and valley smil'd.*
 This saw his hapless foes but stood obdur'd,
 And to rebellious fight rallied their Powers
 Insensate, hope-conceiving from despair. 700
 In heav'nly Spi'rits could such perverseness dwell ?
 But to convince the proud what signs avail,
 Or wonders move th' obdurate to relent ?
 They harden'd more by what might most reclaim,
 Grieving to see his glory, at the sight 705
 Took envy ; and aspiring to his height,

Stood reimbattel'd fierce, by force or fraud
Weening to prosper, and at length prevail
Against God and Messiah, or to fall
In universal ruin lost; and now

710

To final battle drew, disdain'g flight,
Or faint retreat; when the great Son of God
To all his host on either hand thus spake.

Stand still in bright array, ye Sains, here stand
Ye angels arm'd, this day from battle rest.
Faithful hath been your warfare, and of God
Accepted, fearless in his righteous cause.
And as ye have receiv'd, so have ye done
Invincibly; but of this curst crew

715

The punishment to other hand belongs.
Number to this day's work is not ordain'd
Nor multitude; stand only and behold
God's indignation on these godless pour'd
By me; not you but me they have despis'd.

720

* So spake the Son, and into terror chang'd
His count'nance too severe to be beheld,
And full of wrath bent on his enemies.

725

At once the Four spread out their starry wings
With dreadful shade contiguous, and the orbs
Of his fierce chariot roll'd, as with the sound
Of torrent floods, or of a numerous host.

730

He on his impious foes right onward drove,
Gloomy as night; under his burning wheels
The stedfast empyrean shook throughout,
All but the throne itself of God. Full soon
Among them he arriv'd, in his right hand
Grasping ten thousand thunders, which he sent
Before him, such as in their souls infix'd

735

B ool
Plagu
All co
O'er r
Of Th
That v
Throw
Nor le
His ar
Distind
Distind
One Sp
Glar'd
Among
And of
Exhaus
Yet hal
His thu
Not to
The ove
Of goa
Drove t
And cry
Roll'd i
Into the
Struck t
Urg'd th
Down fr
Burnt af
*Hell he
Heav'n r
Affright

Plagues; they astonish'd all resistance lost,
 All courage; down their idle weapons dropt. 740
 O'er shields and helms and helmed heads he rode
 Of Thrones and mighty Seraphim prostrate,
 That wish'd the mountains now might be again
 Thrown on them as a shelter from his ire.
 Nor less on either side tempestuous fell 745
 His arrows, from the fourfold-visag'd four
 Distinct with eyes, and from the living wheels
 Distinct alike with multitude of eyes;
 One Spirit in them rul'd, and every eye
 Glar'd lightning, and shot forth pernicious fire 750
 Among th' accurs'd, that wither'd all their strength,
 And of their wonted vigour left them drain'd,
 Exhausted, spiritless, afflicted, fall'n.
 Yet half his strength he put not forth, but check'd
 His thunder in mid volley; for he meant 755
 Not to destroy, but root them out of heaven.*
 The overthrown he rais'd, and as a herd
 Of goats or timorous flock together throng'd
 Drove them before him thunder-struck, to th' bounds
 And crystal wall of heav'n, which opening wide, 760
 Roll'd inward, and a spacious gap disclos'd
 Into the wasteful deep; the monstrous sight
 Struck them with horror backward, but far worse
 Urg'd them behind; headlong themselves they threw
 Down from the verge of heav'n; eternal wrath 765
 Burnt after them to the bottomless pit.
 *Hell heard th' unsufferable noise, hell saw
 Heav'n ruining from heav'n, and would have fled
 Affrighted; but strict fate had cast too deep

Her dark foundations, and too fast had bound. 770
 Nine days they fell; confounded Chaos roar'd,
 And felt tenfold confusion in their fall
 Through his wild anarchy; so huge a rout
 Incumber'd him with ruin: hell at last
 Yawning receiv'd them whole, and on them clos'd; 775
 Hell their fit habitation fraught with fire
 Unquenchable, the house of woe and pain.*
 Disburden'd heav'n rejoic'd, and soon repair'd
 Her mural breach, returning whence it roll'd.
 Sole victor from th' expulsion of his foes 780
 Messiah his triumphal chariot turn'd:
 To meet him all his Saints, who silent stood
 Eye-witnesses of his almighty acts,
 With jubilee advanc'd; and as they went,
 Shaded with branching palm, each Order bright 785
 Sung triumph, and him sung victorious King,
 Son, Heir, and Lord. He celebrated rode
 Triumphant through mid heav'n, into the courts
 And temple of his mighty Father thron'd
 On high; who into glory him receiv'd, 790
 Where now he sits at the right hand of bliss.
 Thus measuring things in heav'n by things on earth,
 At thy request, and that thou may'st beware
 By what is past, to thee I have reveal'd
 What might have else to human race been hid; 795
 The discord which besel, and war in heaven
 Among th' angelic Pow'rs, and the deep fall
 Of those too high aspiring, who rebell'd
 With Satan: him who envies now thy state
 Who now is plotting how he may seduce 800

Thee also from obedience, that with him
Bereav'd of happiness thou may'st partake
His punishment, eternal misery.

But listen not to his temptations, warn

Thy weaker ; let it profit thee to' have heard

805

By terrible example the reward

Of disobedience ; firm they might have stood,

Yet fell ; remember, and fear to transgress.





Notes on PARADISE LOST.

B O O K VI.

- Ver. 8. *Vicissitude*.—Alternate change.
- Ver. 18. *War in Procinct*.—The Roman Soldiers were said to stand in Procinct, when they were just ready for the Onset.
- Ver. 40. *Prowess*.—Valour.
- Ver. 49. *Tartarus*.—Hell.
- Ver. 56. *Militant*.—Warring.
- Ver. 57. *Quadrate*.—A square Body.
- Ver. 64. *Obvious*.—Lying in their Way.
- Ver. 70. *This Terrene*.—This Earth.
- Ver. 74. *In the Horrizon*.—The Part which bounds the View.
- Ver. 78. *Rigid*.—Stiff, firm.—*Poutraid*.—Painted.
- Ver. 81. *Theyween'd*.—Thought.—*Hosling*.—Encounter.
- Ver. 96. *Idol of Majesty Divine*.—Mimicking it.
- Ver. 108. *And thus*.—Reasons within himself.
- Ver. 110. *Realty*.—Reality: No Substance.
- Ver. 159. *The Ministralls*.—Musicians of Heaven.
- Ver. 177. *Erst*.—A while since.—*Lewdly*.—Profanely, impiously.

Ver. 226. *The Ridges*.—The Ranks are figuratively so called, alluding to a ploughed field.

Ver. 229. *The Moment*.—Is the Weight which turns the Scales, equally poised before.

Ver. 266. *Precipitate*.—Cast thee down headlong.

Ver. 268. *The Adversary*.—Of GOD and Man, emphatically so called.

Ver. 278. *Here however we mean to dwell free*.

Ver. 211. *Shared*.—Pierced thro'. To *gride* is to cut.

Ver. 314. *Convolved*.—Bowed together.

Ver. 315. *Discontinuous*.—Dividing the Parts from each other.

Ver. 334. *Liquid*.—Pliable, flexible; not solid or hard.

Ver. 354. *Plate* is broad, solid Armour; *Mail* is composed of small Pieces like Fish-Scales.

Ver. 336. *Swerved* —Leaned to one Side.

Ver. 372. *Cubic Phalanx*.—Square every way

Ver. 377. *Unobnoxious*.—Not liable.

Ver. 401. *Fallible of future*.—Liable to mistake as to future Events.

Ver. 442. *Main to*.—Necessary to.

Ver. 450. *Spume*.—Froth.

Ver. 452. *Ambient*.—Surrounding.

Ver. 453. *In their Nativity*.—Their Native Bed.

Ver. 454. *Infernal Flame* —Though they had not yet seen it, they had heard of Hell.

Ver. 455. *Dilated and Infuriate*.—Furiouſly dilated. *Spencer*, long before *Milton*, aſcribed this invention to the Devil.

Ver. *Machination*.—Contrivance: *Crude*.—Unripe.

Ver. 488. *To found*.—To caſt in moulds.

- Ver. 489 *Missive Weapons* are those that are shot or thrown. *Incentive Reed.*—Easy to take or kindle fire. *Pernicious.*—Quick, Speedy.
- Ver. 491. *Under conjicious Night.*—During the night, which was privy to their Designs.
- Ver. 497. *Panoply.*—Compleat Armour.
- Ver. 511. *Sad.*—Sour and sullen.
- Ver. 516. *Barbed.*—Bearded, headed.
- Ver. 523 *Training* —Drawing—*Impaled* —Covered.
- Ver. 550. *Embowel'd.*—Tore the Bowels of it.
- Ver. 552. *In hollow Cube.*—A square battalion, hollow in the middle.
- Ver. 561. *To relax their ferried Files.*—To open their close Ranks.
- Ver. 568. *To displode.*—To discharge. *Tire.*—Row.
- Ver. 600. *Implacable.*—Which could not be assuaged.
- Ver. 607. *Jaculation.*—Darting, tossing.
- Ver. 615. *Advised.*—Of set purpose.
- Ver. 619. *The Assessor of his Throne.*—Who sat by him on his Throne.
- Ver. 669. *Beril* is a precious Stone of a Sea green Colour. *And careering Fires between.*—Striking forward, whirling, flashing: Lightnings, darting out strait, then turning quick every way.
- Ver. 674. *Urim.*—Light.
- Ver. 678. *Bickering flame.*—Breaking out in sudden and kindling it to Fury, Ezek. i. 4. it is a *Fire infolding itself*: literally, *Fire catching itself*.
- Ver. 691. *Circumsufed.*—Spread around.
- Ver. 698. *Obdured.*—Hardened.
- Ver. 768. *Ruining.*—Rushing violently.
- Ver. 779. *Her mural Breach.*—The Breach in her Wall.

P

Raphae
this
of Sa
to cre
in;
perfor
with
into he

A D A
TH

With ad
Of thing
The doub
Led on, y
What nea
Of heav'n
Proceede
Great t
Far differ
Divine int
Down fro
Us timely

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK VII.

THE ARGUMENT.

Raphael at the request of Adam relates how and wherefore this world was first created; that God, after the expelling of Satan and his angels out of heaven, declar'd his pleasure to create another world and other creatures to dwell therein; sends his Son with glory and attendance of angels to perform the work of creation in six days: the angels celebrate with hymns the performance thereof, and his reascension into heaven.

A DAM mean time with his consoorted Eve
 The story heard attentive, and was fill'd
 With admiration and deep muse, to hear
 Of things so high and strange; but soon repel'd
 The doubts that in his heart arose; and now
 Led on, yet sinless, with desire to know
 What nearer might concern him, how this world
 Of heav'n and earth conspicuous first began,
 Proceeded thus to ask his heav'nly guest.

Great things, and full of wonder in our ears,
 Far differing from this world, thou hast reveal'd,
 Divine interpreter, by favour sent
 Down from the empyrean to forewarn
 Us timely of what might else have been our loss,

Unknown, which human knowledge could not reach: 15
 For which to th' infinitely Good we owe
 Immortal thanks, and his admonishment
 Receive with solemn purpose to observe
 Immutably his sov'reign will, the end
 Of what we are. But since thou hast vouchsaf'd 20
 Gently for our instruction to impart
 Things above earthly thought, which yet concern'd
 Our knowing, as to highest wisdom seem'd,
 Deign to descend now lower, and relate
 What may no less perhaps avail us known, 25
 *How first began this heav'n which we behold
 Distant so high, with moving fires adorn'd
 Innumerable, and this which yields or fills
 All space, the ambient air wide interfus'd
 Embracing round this florid earth * what cause 30
 Mov'd the Creator in his holy rest
 Through all eternity so late to build
 In Chaos, and the work begun, how soon
 Absolv'd, if unforbid thou may'st unfold
 What we, not to explore the secrets ask 35
 Of his eternal empire, but the more
 To magnify his works, the more we know.
 *And the great light of day yet wants to run
 Much of his race though steep; suspense in heaven,
 Held by thy voice; thy potent voice he hears, 40
 And longer will delay to hear thee tell
 His generation, and the rising birth
 Of nature from the unapparent deep:
 Or if the star of evening and the moon
 Haste to thy audience, night with her will bring 45
 Silence, and sleep list'ning to thee will watch,

Or we can bid his absence, till thy song
End, and dismiss thee ere the morning shine.*

Thus Adam his illustrious guest besought :

And thus the Godlike angel answer'd mild.

50

This also thy request with caution ask'd

Obtain : though to recount almighty works

What words or tongue of Seraph can suffice,

Or heart of man suffice to comprehend ?

Yet what thou canst attain, which best may serve

55

To glorify the Maker, and infer

Thee also happier, shall not be withheld

Thy hearing, such commission from above

I have receiv'd, to answer thy desire

Of knowledge within bounds ; beyond abstain

60

To ask, nor let thine own inventions hope

Things not reveal'd, which th' invisible King,

Only omniscient, hath suppress'd in night,

To none communicable in earth or heaven :

Enough is left besides to search and know.

65

*But knowledge is as food, and needs no less

Her temp'rance over appetite, to know

In measure what the mind may well contain ;

Oppresses else with surfeit, and soon turns

Wisdom to folly, as nourishment to wind.*

70

Know then, that after Lucifer from heaven

(So call him, brighter once amidst the host

Of angels, than that star the stars among)

Fell with his flaming legions through the deep

Into his place, and the great Son return'd

75

Victorious with his Saints, th' omnipotent

Eternal Father from his throne beheld

Their multitude, and to his Son thus spake.

At least our envious foe hath fail'd, who thought
 All like himself rebellious, by whose aid 80
 This inaccessible high strength, the seat
 Of deity supreme, us dispossefs'd,
 He trusted to have seiz'd, and into fraud
 Drew many, whom their place knows here no more.
 Yet far the greater part have kept, I see, 85
 Their station, heaven yet populous retains
 Number sufficient to possess her realms
 Though wide, and this high temple to frequent
 With ministeries due and solemn rites.
 But lest his heart exalt him in the harm 90
 Already done, to have dispeopled heaven,
 My damage fondly deem'd, I can repair
 That detriment, (if such it be to lose
 Self-lost,) and in a moment will create
 Another world, out of one man a race 95
 Of men innumerable, there to dwell,
 Not here, till under long obedience try'd.
 And thou my Word, begotten Son, by thee
 This I perform, speak thou, and be it done :
 My overshadowing Spi'rit and might with thee 100
 I send along; ride forth, and bid the deep
 Within appointed bounds be heav'n and earth.
 Boundless the deep, because I am who fill
 Infinitude, nor vacuous the space.
 So spake th' Almighty, and to what he spake 105
 His Word, the filial Godhead, gave effect.
 Immediate are the acts of God, more swift
 Than time or motion, but to human ears
 Cannot without process of speech be told,

Book VII. PARADISE LOST. 183

So told as earthly motion can receive. 110

Great triumph and rejoicing was in heaven,
When such was heard declar'd th' Almighty's will;

Glory they sung to the most High, good-will
To future men, and in their dwellings peace:

Glory to him, whose just avenging ire 115

Had driven out th' ungodly from his sight

And th' habitations of the just; to him

Glory and praise, whose wisdom had ordain'd

Good out of evil to create, instead

Of Spi'rits malign a better race to bring 120

Into their vacant room, and thence diffuse

His good to worlds and ages infinite.

* So sang the Hierarchies: Mean while the Son

On his great expedition now appear'd,

Girt with omnipotence, with radiance crown'd 125

Of majesty divine; sapience, and love

Immenſe, and all his Father in him ſhone.

About his chariot numberleſs were pour'd

Cherub and Seraph, Potentates and Thrones,

And Virtues, winged Spi'rits, and chariots wing'd 130

From th' armoury of God, where ſtand of old

Myriads between two brazen mountains lodg'd

Againſt a ſolemn day, harneſs'd at hand,

Celeſtial equipage; and now came forth

Spontaneous, for within them Spirit liv'd, 135

Attendant on their Lord: heav'n open'd wide

Her ever during gates, harmonious found

On golden hinges moving, to let forth

The King of Glory in his pow'rful Word

And Spirit coming to create new worlds. 140

On heav'nly ground they stood, and from the shore
 They view'd the vast immeasurable abyfs
 Outrageous as a sea, dark, wasteful, wild,
 Up from the bottom turn'd by furious winds
 And surging waves, as mountains, to assault 145
 Heav'n's height, and with the centre mix the pole.

* Silence, ye troubled waves, and thou deep, peace,
 Said then th' omnific Word, your discord end :
 Nor stay'd, but on the wings of Cherubim
 Uplifted, in paternal glory rode 150
 Far into Chaos, and the world unborn;
 For Chaos heard his voice : him all his train
 Follow'd in bright procession to behold
 Creation, and the wonders of his might.
 Then stay'd the fervid wheels, and in his hand 155
 He took the golden compasses, prepar'd
 In God's eternal store, to circumscribe
 This universe, and all created things ;
 One foot he center'd, and the other turn'd
 Round through the vast profundity obscure, 160
 And said, Thus far extend, thus far thy bounds,
 This be thy just circumference, O world.*
 Thus God the heav'n created, thus the earth,
 Matter unform'd and void : Darkness profound
 Cover'd th' abyfs : but on the watry calm 165
 His brooding wings the Spi'rit of God outspread,
 And vital virtue' infus'd, and vital warmth
 Throughout the fluid mass, but downward purg'd
 The black tartareous cold infernal dregs
 Adverse to life ; then founded, then conglob'd 170
 Like things to like, the rest to several place
 Disparted, and between spun out the air,

And earth self-balanc'd on her center hung.

* Let there be light, said God, and forthwith light
Ethereal, first of things, quintessence pure 175

Sprung from the deep, and from her native east

To journey through the aery gloom began,

Spier'd in a radiant cloud, for yet the sun

Was not; she in a cloudy tabernacle

Sojourn'd the while.* God saw the light was good; 180

And light from darkness by the hemisphere

Divided: light the day, and darkness night

*He nam'd. Thus was the first day ev'n and morn:

Nor past uncelebrated, nor un Sung

By the celestial Choirs, when orient light 185

Exhaling first from darkness they beheld;

Birth-day of heav'n and earth; with joy and shout

The hollow universal orb they fill'd,*

And touch'd their golden harps, and hymning prais'd

God and his works, Creator him they sung, 190

Both when first evening was, and when first morn.

Again, God said, Let there be firmament

Amid the waters, and let it divide

The waters from the waters; and God made

The firmament, expanse of liquid pure, 195

Transparent, elemental air, diffus'd

In circuit to the uttermost convex

Of this great round: partition firm and sure,

The waters underneath from those above

Dividing: for as earth, so he the world 200

Built on circumfluous calm, in waters wide

CrySTALLINE ocean, and the loud misrule

Of Chaos far remov'd, lest fierce extremes

Contiguous might distemper the whole frame :
 And heav'n he nam'd the firmament : So even 205
 And morning-chorus sung the second day.

The earth was form'd, but in the womb as yet
 Of waters, embryo immature involv'd,
 Appear'd not : over all the face of earth
 Main ocean flow'd, not idle, but with warm 210
 Prolific humor soft'ning all her glebe,
 Fermented the great mother to conceive,
 Sate with genial moisture, when God said,
 Be gather'd now ye waters under heaven
 Into one place, and let dry land appear. 215

*Immediately the mountains huge appear
 Emergent, and their broad bare backs upheave
 Into the clouds, their tops ascend the sky :
 So high as heav'd the tumid hills, so low
 Down sunk a hollow bottom broad and deep, 220
 Capacious bed of waters : * thither they
 Hastened with glad precipitance, uproll'd
 As drops on dust conglobing from the dry.
 Part rise in crystal wall, or ridge direct,
 For haste ; such flight the great command impress'd 225
 On the swift floods : as armies at the call
 Of trumpet (for of armies thou hast heard)
 Troop to their standard, so the watry throng,
 Wave rolling after wave, where way they found,
 If steep with torrent rapture, if through plain, 230
 Soft ebbing ; nor withstood them rock or hill,
 But they, or under ground, or circuit wide
 With serpent error wand'ring, found their way,
 And on the washy ooze deep channels wore ;
 Easy, ere God had bid the ground be dry, 235

* All but within those banks, where rivers now
Stream, and perpetual draw their humid train.*
The dry land, earth, and the great receptacle
Of congregated waters he call'd seas :
And saw that it was good, and said, Let th' earth 240
Put forth the verdant grafs, herb yielding feed,
And fruit-tree yielding fruit after her kind,
Whose seed is in herself upon the earth.
He scarce had said, when the bare earth, till then
Desart and bare, unsightly, unadorn'd, 245
*Brought forth the tender grafs, whose verdure clad
Her universal face with pleasant green :
Then herbs of every leaf, that sudden flow'rd
Opening their various colours, and made gay
Her bosom smelling sweet : and these scarce blown, 250
Forth flourish'd thick the clustring vine, forth crept
The swelling gourd, up stood the corny reed
Imbattl'd in her field, and th' humble shrub,
And bush with frizled hair implicit : last
Rose as in dance the stately trees, and spread 255
Their branches hung with copious fruit, or gemm'd
Their blossoms : with high woods the hills were crown'd,
With tufts the valleys, and each fountain side,
With borders long the rivers : that earth now
Seem'd like to heav'n, a seat where Gods might dwell,* 260
Or wander with delight, and love to haunt
Her sacred shades : though God had yet not rain'd
Upon the earth, and man to till the ground
None was, but from the earth a dewy mist
Went up and water'd all the ground, and each 265
Plant of the field, which, ere it was in th' earth
God made, and every herb, before it grew

On the green stem; God saw that it was good:

So ev'n and morn recorded the third day.

Again th' Almighty spake, Let there be lights 270

High in th' expanse of heaven to divide

The day from night; and let them be for signs,

For seasons, and for days, and circling years;

And let them be for lights as I ordain

Their office in the firmament of heaven 275

To give light on the earth; and it was so.

And God made two great lights, great for their use

To man, the greater o have rule by day,

The less by night altern; and made the stars,

And set them in the firmament of Heaven 280

To' illuminate the earth, and rule the day

In their vicissitude, and rule the night,

And light from darkness to divide. God saw,

Surveying his great work, that it was good.

* Of the celestial bodies first the sun 285

A mighty sphere he fram'd, unlightsome first,

Though of ethereal mold: then form'd the moon

Globose, and every magnitude of stars,

And sow'd with stars the Heav'n thick as a field:

Of light by far the greater part he took, 290

Transplanted from her cloudy shrine, and plac'd

In the sun's orb, made porous to receive

And drink the liquid light, firm to retain

Her gather'd beams, great palace now of light.

Hither as to their fountain other stars 295

Repairing, in their golden urns draw light,

And hence the morning planet gilds her horns.*

By tincture or reflection they augment

Their small peculiar, though from human sight

Book

So far

*First

Regen

Invest

His lo

Dawn

Sheddi

But op

Her mi

From h

In that

Till nig

With th

With th

Spangli

With th

Glad ev

And

Reptile

And let

Display

And Go

Soul livi

The wat

And eve

And saw

Be fruitf

And lake

And let t

Forthwit

With fry

*Of fishes

So far remote, with diminution seen.

300

*First in his east the glorious lamp was seen,

Regent of day, and all th' horizon round

Invested with bright rays, jocund to run

His longitude through heav'n's high road; the gray

Dawn, and the Pleiades before him danc'd

305

Shedding sweet influence. Lefs bright the moon,

But opposite in level'd west was set

Her mirror, with full face borrowing her light

From him, for other light she needed none

In that aspect, and still that distance keeps

310

Till night, then in the east shines, and her reign

With thousand lesser lights dividual holds,*

*With thousand thousand stars, that then appear'd

Spangling the hemisphere: then first adorn'd

With their bright luminaries that set and rose,

315

Glad evening and glad morn crown'd the fourth day.

And God said, Let the waters generate

Reptile with spawn abundant, living soul:

And let fowl fly above the earth, with wings

Display'd on the' open firmament of heaven.

320

And God created the great whales, and each

Soul living, each that crept, which plenteously

The waters generated by their kinds,

And every bird of wing after his kind;

And saw that it was good, and blest'd them, saying

325

Be fruitful, multiply, and in the seas

And lakes and running streams the waters fill;

And let the fowl be multiply'd on th' earth.

Forthwith the sounds and seas, each creek and bay

With fry innumerable swarm, and shoals

330

*Of fishes that with fins and shining scales

Glide under the green wave, in sculls that oft
 Bank the mid sea: part single or with mate
 Graze the sea weed their pasture, and through groves
 Of coral stray, or sporting with quick glance 335
 Show to the sun their wav'd coats dropt with gold,*
 Or in their pearly shells at ease, attend
 Moist nutriment, or under rocks their food
 In jointed armour watch: on smooth the seal,
 And bended dolphins play: part huge of bulk 340
 Wallowing unwieldy', enormous in their gate
 Tempest the ocean: there leviathan,
 Hugest of living creatures, on the deep
 Stretch'd like a promontory sleeps or swims,
 And seems a moving land, and at his gills 345
 Draws in, and at his trunk spouts out a sea.
 Mean while the tepid caves, and fens and shores
 Their brood as numerous hatch, from th' egg that soon
 Burstling with kindly rupture forth disclos'd
 Their callow young, but feather'd soon and sledge 350
 They summ'd their pens, and soaring th' air sublime
 With clang despis'd the ground, under a cloud
 In prospect; there the eagle and the stork
 On cliffs and cedar tops their eyries build:
 Part loosely wing the region, part more wise 355
 In common, rang'd in figure wedge their way,
 Intelligent of seasons, and set forth
 Their aery caravan high over seas
 Flying, and over lands with mutual wing
 Easing their flight; (so steers the prudent crane 360
 Her annual voyage,) borne on wings; the air
 Floats, as they pass, fann'd with unnumber'd plumes.
 From branch to branch the smaller birds with song

Book V
 Solac'd
 Till ev
 Ceas'd
 Others
 Their c
 Betwee
 Her sta
 The bar
 The m
 Walk'd
 The fle
 Adorns
 Of rain
 With fi
 Evening
 The f
 With ev
 Let th'
 Cattle an
 Each in
 Openin
 Innume
 Limb'd
 As from
 In fore
 Among
 The cat
 These r
 Pasturin
 *The gr
 The taw
 His hin

Solac'd the woods, and spread their painted wings
Till ev'n, nor then the solemn nightingale 365

Ceas'd warbling, but all night tuned her soft lays :
Others on silver lakes and rivers bath'd
Their downy breast ; * the swan with arched neck
Between her white wings mantling proudly, rows
Her state with oary feet ; yet oft they quit 370

The bank, and rising on stiff pennons, tower
The mid aerial sky : Others on ground
Walk'd firm : the crested cock whose clarion sounds
The silent hours, and th' other whose gay train
Adorns him, colour'd with the florid hue 375
Of rainbows and starry' eyes.* The waters thus
With fish replenish'd, and the air with fowl,
Evening and morn solemniz'd the fifth day.

The sixth, and of creation last arose
With evening harps and matin, when God said, 380
Let th' earth bring forth fowl living in her kind,
Cattle and creeping things, and beast of th' earth,
Each in their kind. The earth obey'd, and straight
Opening her fertile womb teem'd at a birth
Innumerable living creatures, perfect forms, 385

Limb'd and full grown : out of the ground up rose
As from his lair the wild beast where he wons
In forest wild, in thicket, brake, or den ;
Among the trees in pairs they rose, they walk'd ;
The cattle in the fields and meadows green : 390

Those rare and solitary, these in flocks
Pasturing at once, and in broad herds upsprung.
*The grassy clods now calv'd, now half appear'd
The tawny lion, pawing to get free
His hinder parts, then springs as broke from bands, 395

And rampant flaakes his brinded mane,* the ounce,
 The libbard, and the tyger, as the mole
 Rising, the crumbled earth above them threw
 In hillocks : the swift stag from under ground
 Bore up his branching head : * scarce from his mold 400
 Behemoth biggest born of earth upheav'd
 His vastness : fleec'd the flocks and bleating rose,
 As plants : ambiguous between sea and land
 The river horse and scaly crocodile.
 At once came forth whatever creeps the ground 405
 *Insect or worm : those wav'd their fans
 For wings, and smallest lineaments exact
 In all the liveries deck'd of summer's pride
 With spots of gold and purple', azure and green :
 These as a line their long dimensions drew, 410
 Streaking the ground with sinuous trace ; not all
 Minims of nature ; some of serpent kind,
 Wondrous in length and corpulence, involv'd
 Their snaky folds, and added wings.* First crept
 The parsimonious emmet, provident 415
 Of future, in small room large heart inclos'd,
 Pattern of just equality perhaps
 Hereafter, joined in her popular tribes
 Of commonalty : swarming next appear'd
 The female bee, that feeds her husband drone 420
 Deliciously, and builds her waxen cells
 With honey stor'd : the rest are numberless,
 And thou their natures know'st, and gav'st them names,
 Needless to thee repeated. Nor unknown
 The serpent subtlest beast of all the field, 425
 Of huge extent sometimes, with brazen eyes
 And hairy mane terrific; though to thee

Not noxious, but obedient at thy call.

*Now heav'n in all her glory shone, and roll'd
Her motions as the great first Mover's hand 430

First wheel'd their course; earth in her rich attire
Consummate lovely smil'd; * air, water, earth,
By fowl, fish, beast, was flown, was swum, was walk'd
Frequent; and of the sixth day yet remain'd.

There wanted yet the master work, the end 435

Of all yet done; a creature who not prone
And brute as other creatures, but indued

With sanctity of reason, might erect
His stature, and upright with front serene

Govern the rest, self-knowing, and from thence 440

Magnanimous to correspond with heaven,

But grateful to acknowledge whence his good

Descends, thither with heart and voice and eyes

Directed in devotion, to adore

And worship God supreme, who made him chief 445

Of all his works: therefore th' Omnipotent

Eternal Father (for where is not he

Present?) thus to his Son audibly spake.

Let us make now Man in our image, Man

In our similitude, and let them rule 450

Over the fish and fowl of sea and air,

Beast of the field, and over all the earth,

And every creeping thing that creeps the ground.

This said, he form'd thee, Adam, thee, O Man,

Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breath'd 455

The breath of life, in his own image he

Created thee, in the image of God

Express, and thou becam'st a living soul.

Male he created thee, but thy comfort
 Female for race; then blest'd mankind, and said, 460
 Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the earth,
 Subdue it, and throughout dominion hold
 Over fish of the sea, and fowl of th' air,
 And every living thing that moves on th' earth
 Wherever thus created, (for no place 465
 Is yet distinct by name,) thence, as thou know'st,
 He brought thee into this delicious grove,
 This garden, planted with the trees of God,
 Delectable both to behold and taste;
 And freely all their pleasant fruit for food 470
 Gave thee; all sorts are here that all th' earth yields,
 Variety without end; but of the tree,
 Which tasted works knowlege of good and evil,
 Thou may'st not; in the day thou eat'st, thou dy'st.
 Death is the penalty impos'd, beware, 575
 And govern well thy appetite, lest Sin
 Surprise thee, and her black attendant Death.
 Here finish'd he, and all that he had made
 View'd, and behold all was entirely good;
 So ev'n and morn accomplish'd the sixth day:
 Yet not till the Creator from his work 480
 Desisting, though unwearied, up return'd
 Up to the heav'n of heav'ns his high abode,
 Thence to behold this new created world
 Th' addition of his empire, how it show'd 485
 In prospect from his throne, how good, how fair,
 Answering his great idea Up he rode
 Follow'd with acclamation and the sound
 Symphonious of ten thousand harps that tun'd
 Angelic harmonies: the earth, the air 490

Book VII. PARADISE LOST. 195

Refounded, (thou remember'st, for thou heardst)
 The heav'ns and all the constellations rung,
 The planets in their station list'ning stood,
 While the bright pomp ascended jubilant.
 Open, ye everlasting gates, they sung, 495
 Open, ye heav'ns, your living doors; let in
 The great Creator from his work return'd
 Magnificent, his six days work, a world.
 Open, and henceforth oft'; for God will deign
 To visit oft the dwellings of just men 500
 Delighted, and with frequent intercourse
 Thither will send his winged messengers
 On errands of supernal grace. So sung
 The glorious train ascending: He through heaven,
 That open'd wide her blazing portals, led 505
 To God's eternal house direct the way,
 A broad and ample road, whose dust is gold
 And pavement stars, as stars to thee appear,
 Seen in the galaxy, that milky way,
 Which nightly as a circling zone thou seest 510
 Powder'd with stars. And now on earth the seventh
 Evening arose in Eden, for the sun
 Was set, and twilight from the east came on,
 Forerunning night; when at the holy mount
 Of heav'n's high-seated top, th' imperial throne 515
 Of Godhead, fix'd for ever firm and sure,
 The Filial Pow'r arriv'd, and from his work
 Now resting, blest'd and hallow'd the seventh day,
 As resting on that day from all his work;
 But not in silence only kept; the harp 520
 Had work and rested not, of incense clouds.

Fuming from golden censers hid the mount.
Creation and the six days acts they sung,
Great are thy works, Jehovah, infinite
Thy pow'r ; what thought can measure thee or tongue 525
Relate thee? Creator now in thy return
Than from the giant angels. Thee that day
Thy thunders magnify'd ; but to create
Is greater than created to destroy.
Who can impair thee, mighty King, or bound 530
Thy empire? Easily the proud attempt
Of Spi'rits apostate and their counsels vain
Thou hast repell'd, while impiously they thought
Thee to diminish, and from thee withdraw
The number of thy worshippers. Who seeks 535
To lessen thee, against his purpose serves
To manifest the more thy might ; his evil
Thou usest, and from thence creat'st more good.
Witness this new-made world, another heaven
From heaven gate not far, founded in view 540
On the clear hyaline, the glassy sea :
Of amplitude almost immense, with stars
Numerous, and every star perhaps a world
Of destin'd habitation ; but thou know'st
Their seasons : among these the seat of Men. 545
Earth with her nether ocean circumfus'd,
Their pleasant dwelling place. Thrice happy Men,
And sons of Men, whom God hath thus advanc'd,
Created in his image, there to dwell
And worship him, and in reward to rule 550
Over his works, on earth, in sea, or air,
And multiply a race of worshippers
Holy and just : thrice happy if they know

Their happiness, and persevere upright.

*So sung they, and the empyrean rung,

555

With Hallelujahs: Thus was sabbath kept.

And thy request think now fulfill'd, that ask'd

How first this world and face of things began,

And what before thy memory was done

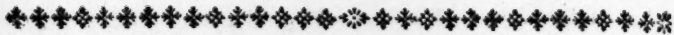
From the beginning, that posterity

560

Inform'd by thee might know; if else thou seek'st

Ought, not surpassing human measure, say.





Notes on PARADISE LOST.

B O O K VII.

- Ver. 29. *Interfused*.—Insinuating into and betwixt all other bodies.
- Ver. 80. *Florid*.—Adorned with flowers.
- Ver. 94. *Self-lost*.—Those who destroy themselves.
- Ver. 104. *Vacuous*.—Empty.
- Ver. 120. *Malign*.—Wicked.
- Ver. 126. *Sapience*.—Wisdom.
- Ver. 132. The Thought is taken from *Zeck. vi. 1.*
- Ver. 148. *Omnific*.—All creating.
- Ver. 160. *The profundity obscure*.—The dark Abyfs.
- Ver. 170. *Founded and Conglobed*.—Caused them to mingle and cleave together.
- Ver. 181. *By the Hemisphere, Divided*—One half of the Globe being enlightened, the other, not.
- Ver. 192. It is not called the *Firmament*, as being a solid Body, but as being a Partition firm and immovable.
- Ver. 201. *Circumfluous*.—Flowing round it.
- Ver. 208. *Embryon immature involved*.—Wrapt up, like a child in the womb, not yet ripe for the birth.
- Ver. 223. *Conglobing*.—Forming themselves into roundness.

- Ver. 230. *With torrent rapture*.—Pouring on swiftly and violently.
- Ver. 233. *With Serpent error*.—Creeping round about.
- Ver. 234. *Oose*.—Sea or River Mud.
- Ver. 248. *Then the Earth brought forth Herbs*.
- Ver. 252. *Corny*—Stiff like Horn.
- Ver. 254. *Implicit*.—Intangled.
- Ver. 256. *Gemm'd*.—Budded forth.
- Ver. 279. *Altern*.—By turns.
- Ver. 287. *Globose*.—Round. *Every magnitude of Stars*.
—Stars of every size.
- Ver. 295. An *Urn* is any hollow Vessel, that contains Ashes, or any Liquid.
- Ver. 297. *The morning Planet, Venus*.—Varies her appearances, just as the Moon does.
- Ver. 300. Being *so far remote*, they appear much less than they are.
- Ver. 304. *His Longitude*.—His course from East to West.
- Ver. 305. *The Pleiades*.—The Seven Stars.
- Ver. 318. *Reptile*.—Creeping thing.
- Ver. 332. *Sculls*.—Sholes so large as to appear like Banks in the Sea
- Ver. 337.—*Attend*.—Wait for.
- Ver. 337. *The Seal*.—Sea Calf.
- Ver. 347. *Tepid*.—Warm.
- Ver. 351. *Summ'd their Pens*.—Gathered their feathers close which had attained their full Strength.
- Ver. 354. *Eyries* are Eagles Nests.
- Ver. 356. *Wedge their way*.—Fly in the form of a Wedge, with the Point foremost.
- Ver. 357. *Intelligent of Seasons*.—Understanding that the Winter Season approaches.

Ver. 369. *Mantling*.—The word is here used to express that peculiar motion of the Swan, when she swims with her wings half extended.

Ver. 371. *The dark*.—The water.

Ver. 374. *The' other*.—The Peacock.

Ver. 387 *His lair*—His Bed or Place of Rest. *He wons*,—Dwells, is wont to be.

Ver. 393. *Calved*.—Brought forth.

Ver. 396. *Brinded*.—It properly means, streaked with various colours. Is a Lion's mane so?

Ver. 396. *The Ounce*.—More usually term'd Lynx.

Ver. 411. *Sinuous*.—Winding.

Ver. 412. *Minims of Nature*.—The least of Nature's Works.

Ver. 436. *Prone*.—Hanging the head downward.

Ver. 494. *Jubilant*.—Praising God, as the *Israelites* did in the year of Jubilee.

Ver. 510. *A circling zone*.—A girdle.

Ver. 546. *Her nether Ocean*.—Which is the *Waters* under the *Firmament*.



PARADISE LOST.

BOOK VIII.

THE ARGUMENT.

Adam inquires concerning celestial motions, is doubtfully answered, and exhorted to search rather things more worthy of knowledge : Adam assents, and still desirous to detain Raphael, relates to him what he remembered since his own creation, his placing in Paradise, his talk with God concerning solitude and fit society, his first meeting and nuptials with Eve, his discourse with the angel thereupon; who after admonitions repeated departs.

THE angel ended, and in Adam's ear

So charming left his voice, that he a while
Thought him still speaking, still stood fix'd to hear;
Then as new wak'd thus gratefully reply'd.

What thanks sufficient, or what recompense 5
Equal have I to render thee, divine
Historian, who thus largely hast allay'd
The thirst I had of knowledge, and vouchsaf'd
This friendly condescension, to relate
Things else by me unsearchable, now heard 10
With wonder, but delight, and, as is due,
With glory attributed to the high
Creator? Something yet of doubt remains,
Which only thy solution can resolve.
When I behold this goodly frame, this world 15
Of heav'n and earth consisting, and compute

Their magnitudes, this earth, a spot, a grain,
 An atom, with the firmament compar'd
 And all her number'd stars, that seem to roll
 Space incomprehensible (for such
 Their distance argues and their swift return
 Diurnal) merely to officiate light
 Round this opacous earth, this punctual spot
 One day and night, in all their vast survey
 Useless besides; reasoning I oft admire,
 How nature wise and frugal could commit
 Such disproportions, with superfluous hand
 So many nobler bodies to create,
 Greater so manifold to this one use,
 For ought appears, and on their orbs impose
 Such restless revolution day by day
 Repeated, while the sedentary earth,
 That better might with far less compass move,
 Serv'd by more noble than herself, attains
 Her end without least motion, and receives,
 As tribute, such a sumless journey brought
 Of incorporeal speed, her warmth and light;
 Speed, to describe whose swiftness, number fails.

So spake our sire, and by his count'nance seem'd
 Ent'ring on studious thoughts abstruse, which Eve
 Perceiving where she sat retir'd in sight,
 With lowliness majestic from her seat,
 And grace that won who saw to wish her stay,
 Rose; and went forth among her-fruits and flowers,
 To visit how they prosper, bud and bloom.
 Yet went she not, as not with such discourse
 Delighted, or not capable her ear
 Of what was high; such pleasure she reserv'd,

Adam
 Her husband
 Before t
 Chose r
 Grateful
 With co
 Not wor
 Such pain
 And Rap
 Benevolen
 To ask
 Is as the
 Wherein
 His season
 This to at
 Imports n
 From man
 Did wisely
 His secrets
 Rather ad
 Conjecture
 Hath left t
 His laughte
 Already by
 Who art to
 That bodie
 He less no
 Earth sittin
 He benefit
 Bright in
 Though, in
 Or glist'rin

Adam relating, she sole auditress;
 Her husband the relater she preferr'd 50
 Before the angel, and of him to ask
 Chose rather; he, she knew, would intermix
 Grateful digression, and solve high dispute
 With conjugal careffes; from his lip
 Not words alone pleas'd her. O when meet now 55
 Such pairs, in love and mutual honour join'd?
 And Raphael now to Adam's doubt propos'd
 Benevolent and facile thus reply'd.

To ask or search I blame thee not, for heaven
 Is as the book of God before thee set, 60
 Wherein to read his wond'rous works, and learn
 His seasons, hours, or days, or months, or years.
 This to attain, whether heav'n move or earth
 Imports not, if thou reckon right. The rest
 From man or angel the great Architect 65
 Did wisely to conceal, and not divulge
 His secrets to be scann'd by them who ought
 Rather admire; or if they list to try
 Conjecture, he his fabric of the heavens
 Hath left to their disputes, perhaps to move 70
 His laughter at their quaint opinions wide.
 Already by thy reasoning this I guess,
 Who art to lead thy offspring, and supposest
 That bodies bright and greater should not serve
 The less not bright, nor heav'n such journeys run, 75
 Earth sitting still, when she alone receives
 The benefit. Consider first, that great
 Bright infers not excellence: the earth
 Though, in comparison of heav'n, so small,
 Or glitt'ring, may of solid good contain 80

More plenty than the sun that barren shines,
 Whose virtue on itself works no effect,
 But in the fruitful earth; there first receiv'd
 His beams, unactive else, their vigour find.
 Yet not to earth are those bright luminaries 85
 Officious, but to the earth's habitant.
 And for the heav'n's wide circuit, let it speak
 The Maker's high Magnificence, who built
 So spacious, and his line stretch'd out so far :
 That Man may know he dwells not in his own;
 An edifice too large for him to fill,
 Lodg'd in a small partition, and the rest
 Ordain'd for uses to his Lord best known.
 The swiftness of those circles attribute,
 Though numberless, to his omnipotence,
 That to corporeal substances could add 95
 Speed almost spiritual. Me thou think'st not slow,
 Who since the morning hour set out from heaven
 Where God resides, and ere mid-day arriv'd
 In Eden, distance inexpressible 100
 By numbers that have name. But this I urge,
 Admitting motion in the heav'ns, to shew
 Invalid that which thee to doubt it mov'd.
 Not that I so affirm, though so it seem
 To thee who hast thy dwelling here on earth.
 God, to remove his ways from human sense,
 Plac'd heav'n from earth so far, that earthly sight,
 If it presume, might err in things too high,
 And no advantage gain. What if the sun
 Be centre to the world, and other stars 105
 By his attractive virtue and their own
 Incited, dance about him various rounds ?

Book V
 In fix t
 If earth
 Travell
 From th
 Still lum
 Sent fro
 To the t
 Inlightn
 This ear
 Fields an
 As clou
 Fruits in
 Allotted
 With the
 Stor'd in
 *But wh
 Whether
 Rise on t
 He from
 Or she fr
 With ino
 On her so
 And bear
 Solicit no
 Leave the
 Of other c
 Wherever
 In what h
 And thy fa
 To know
 Think onl

In fix thou see'st, and what if seventh to these,
 If earth industrious of herself fetch day
 Travelling east, and with her part averse 115
 From the sun's beams meet night, her other part
 Still lumi'nous by his ray? What if that light
 Sent from her through the wide transpicious air,
 To the terrestrial moon be as a star
 Inlightning her by day, as she by night 120
 This earth? Reciprocal, if land be there,
 Fields and inhabitants: Her spots thou see'st
 As clouds, and clouds may rain, and rain produce
 Fruits in her soften'd soil, for some to eat
 Allotted there; and other suns perhaps 125
 With their attendant moons thou wilt descry,
 Stor'd in each orb perhaps with some that live.
 *But whether thus these things, or whether not,
 Whether the sun predominant in heaven
 Rise on the earth, or earth rise on the sun, 130
 He from the east his flaming road begin,
 Or she from west her silent course advance
 With inoffensive pace that spinning sleeps
 On her soft axle, while she paces even,
 And bears thee soft with the smooth air along, 135
 Solicit not thy thoughts with matters hid,
 Leave them to God above, him serve and fear;
 Of other creatures, as him pleases best,
 Wherever plac'd, let him dispose: joy thou
 In what he gives to thee, this Paradise 140
 And thy fair Eve. Heav'n is for thee too high
 To know what passes there; be lowly wise: *
 Think only what concerns thee and thy being;

Dream not of other worlds, what creatures there
 Live, in what state, condition or degree, 145
 Contented that thus far hath been reveal'd
 Not of earth only but of highest heaven.

To whom thus Adam, clear'd of doubt, reply'd.
 How fully hast thou satisfy'd me, pure
 Intelligence of heav'n, angel serene, 150
 And freed from intricacies, taught to live,
 The easiest way, nor with perplexing thoughts
 To interrupt the sweet of life, from which
 God hath bid dwell far off all anxious cares,
 And not molest us, unless we ourselves 155
 Seek them with wand'ring thoughts, and notions vain.
 But apt the mind or fancy is to rove
 Unchecked, and of her roving is no end;
 Till warn'd, or by experience taught, she learn,
 That not to know at large of things remote 160
 From use, obscure or subtle, but to know
 That which before us lies in daily life,
 Is the prime wisdom; what is more, is fume,
 Or emptiness, or fond impertinence,
 And renders us in things that most concern 165
 Unpractis'd, unprepar'd, and still to seek.
 Therefore from this high pitch let us descend
 A lower flight, and speak of things at hand
 Useful, whence haply mention may arise
 Of something not unseasonable to ask 170
 By sufferance, and thy wonted favour deign'd.
 Thee I have heard relating what was done
 Ere my remembrance: now hear me relate
 My story, which perhaps thou hast not heard;
 And day is yet not spent; till then thou seest 175

How subtly to detain thee I devise,
 Inviting thee to hear while I relate,
 Fond, were it not in hope of thy reply:
 *For while I sit with thee, I seem in heaven, 180

And sweeter thy discourse is to my ear
 Than fruit of Palm-tree pleasantest to thirst
 And hunger both, from labour, at the hour
 Of sweet repast; they satiate, and soon fill
 Though pleasant, but thy words with grace divine 185
 Imbued, bring to their sweetness no satiety.*

To whom thus Raphael answer'd heav'nly meek.
 Nor are thy lips ungraceful, Sire of men
 Nor tongue ineloquent; for God on thee,
 Abundantly his gifts hath also pour'd 190

Inward and outward both, his image fair:
 Speaking or mute all comeliness and grace
 Attend thee, and each word, each motion form.

Nor less think we in heav'n of thee on earth
 Than of our fellow servant, and inquire 195
 Gladly into the ways of God with Man:

For God we see hath honour'd thee, and set
 On Man his equal love: say therefore on:
 For I that day was absent, as beset,
 Bound on a voyage uncouth and obscure, 200

Far on excursion toward the gates of hell;
 Quar'd in full legion (such command we had)
 To see that none thence issued forth a spy,
 Or enemy, while God was at his work.

lest he incens'd at such eruption bold, 205
 Destruction with creation might have mix'd.

We found fast shut the dismal gates and strong;

But long ere our approaching heard within
 Noise, other than the sound of dance or song,
 Torment, and loud lament, and furious rage. 210
 Glad we return'd up to the coasts of light
 Ere sabbath evening : so we had in charge.
 But thy relation now ; for I attend,
 Pleas'd with thy words no less than thou with mine.

So spake the Godlike Pow'r, and thus our fire. 215

*For Man to tell how human life began
 Is hard ; for who himself beginning knew ?
 Desire with thee still longer to converse
 Induced me. As new waked from the soundest sleep

Soft on the flow'ry herb I found me laid 220

In balmy sweat, which with his beams the sun
 Soon dry'd, and on the reaking moisture fed.

Straight toward heav'n my wond'ring eyes I turn'd,
 And gazed a while the ample sky, till rais'd
 By quick instinctive motion up I sprung, 225

As thitherward endeavouring, and upright
 Stood on my feet ; about me round I saw

Hill, dale, and shady woods, and sunny plains,
 And liquid lapse of murm'ring streams ; by these,
 Creatures that liv'd and mov'd and walk'd, or flew, 230

Birds on the branches warbling : all things smil'd
 With fragrance ; and with joy my heart o'erflow'd.
 Myself I then perus'd, and limb by limb

Survey'd, and sometimes went, and sometimes ran
 With supple joints, as lively vigour led : 235

But who I was, or where, or from what cause,
 Knew not ; to speak I try'd, and forthwith spake ;
 My tongue obey'd and readily could name
 Whate'er I saw. Thou sun, said I, fair light,

And th

Ye hills

And ye

Tell, if

Not of r

In good

Tell me,

From wh

And feel

While th

From wh

This hap

On a gre

Penfive I

First four

My drou

I then wa

Insensible

*When su

Whose in

My fancy

And liv'd

And said,

First Man,

First Fathe

To the gar

So saying,

And over f

Smooth slic

A woody n

A circuit w

Book VIII. PARADISE LOST. 209

And thou enlighten'd earth, so fresh and gay, 240
 Ye hills, and dales, ye Rivers, Woods, and Plains,
 And ye that live and move, fair Creatures, tell,
 Tell, if ye saw, how came I thus, how here?
 Not of myself; by some great Maker then,
 In goodness and in power pre-eminent. 245
 Tell me, how may I know him, how adore,
 From whom I have that thus I move and live,
 And feel that I am happier than I know.
 While thus I call'd, and stray'd I know not whither,
 From where I first drew air, and first beheld 250
 This happy light, when answer none return'd
 On a green shady bank profuse of flowers
 Pensive I sat me down; there gentle sleep
 First found me, and with soft oppression seiz'd
 My droused sense, untroubled, though I thought 255
 I then was passing to my former state
 Insensible, and forthwith to dissolve: *
 *When suddenly stood at my head a dream,
 Whose inward apparition gently mov'd
 My fancy to believe I yet had being, 260
 And liv'd: One came, methought, of shape divine,
 And said, thy Mansion wants thee, Adam, rise,
 First Man, of men innumerable ordain'd
 First Father, call'd by thee I come thy guide
 To the garden of blifs, thy seat prepar'd. 265
 So saying, by the hand he took me rais'd,
 And over fields and waters, as in air
 Smooth sliding without step, hast led me up
 A woody mountain; whose high top was plain,
 A circuit wide, inclos'd, with goodliest trees 270

Planted, with walks, and bow'rs, that what I saw
 Of earth before scarce pleasant seem'd. Each tree
 Loaden with fairest fruit, that hung to th' eye
 Tempting, stirred in me sudden appetite
 To pluck and eat : whereat I wak'd, and found 275
 Before mine eyes all real, as the dream
 Had lively shadow'd. Here had new begun
 My wand'ring, had not he who was my guide
 Up hither, from among the trees appear'd,
 Presence divine.* Rejoicing, but with awe, 280
 In adoration at his feet I fell
 Submits : he rear'd me', and Whom thou sought'st I am,
 Said mildly, Author of all this thou see'st
 Above or round about thee, or beneath.
 This Paradise I give thee, count it thine 285
 To till and keep, and of the fruit to eat.
 Of every tree that in the garden grows
 Eat freely with glad heart : fear here no dearth :
 But of the tree whose operation brings
 Knowledge of good and ill, which I have set 290
 The pledge of thy obedience and thy faith,
 Amid the garden by the tree of life,
 Remember what I warn thee, shun to taste,
 And shun the bitter consequence : for know,
 The day thou eat'st thereof, my sole command 295
 Transgress'd, inevitably thou shalt die,
 From that day mortal. Sternly he pronounced
 The rigid interdiction, which resounds
 Yet dreadful in mine ear, though in my choice
 Not to incur ; but soon his clear aspect 300
 Return'd, and gracious purpose thus renew'd.
 Not only these fair bounds, but all the earth

To thee a
 Possess it
 Or live in
 In sign w
 After the
 From the
 With low
 Of fish w
 Not hither
 Their elem
 * As thu
 Approachi
 With blan
 I named th
 Their natur
 My sudden
 I found not
 And to the
 O by wh
 Above man
 Surpassest far
 Adore thee,
 And all this
 So amply, an
 Thou hast pr
 I see not wh
 What happen
 Or all enjoyin
 Thus I presun
 As with a smi
 What call'st
 With various

Book VIII. PARADISE LOST. 211

To thee and to thy race I give ; as lord
Possess it, and all things that therein live,
Or live in sea, or air, beast, fish, and fowl. 305

In sign whereof each bird and beast behold
After their kinds ; I bring them to receive
From thee their names, and pay thee fealty
With low subjection ; understand the same
Of fish within their watry residence, 310
Not hither summon'd, since they cannot change
Their element to draw the thinner air.

* As thus he spake, each bird and beast behold
Approaching two and two, these cowering low
With blandishment, each bird stoop'd on his wing. 315
I named them, as they pass'd, and understood
Their nature, with such knowledge God indued
My sudden apprehension : but in these
I found not what methought I wanted still*
And to the heav'nly vision thus presum'd. 320

O by what name, for thou above all these,
Above mankind, or ought than mankind higher
Surpassest far my naming, how may I
Adore thee, Author of this universe,
And all this good to man ? For whose well being 325
So amply, and with hands so liberal
Thou hast provided all things : but with me
I see not who partakes. In solitude
What happiness ? Who can enjoy alone,
Or all enjoying, what contentment find ? 330

Thus I presumptuous ; and the vision bright,
As with a smile more brighten'd, thus reply'd.

What call'st thou solitude ? Is not the earth
With various living creatures, and the air

Replenish'd, and all these at thy command 335
 To come and play before thee? Know'st thou not
 Their language and their ways? They also know,
 And reason not contemptibly; with these
 Find pastime, and bear rule; thy realm is large.
 So spake the universal Lord, and seem'd 340
 So ordering I, with leave of speech implor'd,
 And humble deprecation, thus reply'd.

Let not my words offend thee, heav'nly Power,
 My Maker, be propitious while I speak.
 Hast thou not made me here thy substitute, 345
 And these inferior far beneath me set?
 Among unequals what society
 Can sort, what harmony or true delight?
 Which must be mutual, in proportion due
 Giv'n and receiv'd. Of fellowship I speak 350
 Such as I seek, fit to participate
 All rational delight, wherein the brutes
 Cannot be human comfort; they rejoice
 Each with their kind, lion with lionsess.
 So fitly them in pairs thou hast combin'd; 355
 Much less can bird with beast, or fish with fowl
 So well converse, nor with the ox the ape;
 Worse then can man with beast, and least of all.

Thus I imbolden'd spake, and freedom us'd 360
 Permissive, and acceptance found, which gain'd
 This answer from the gracious voice divine.

Thus far to try thee, Adam, I was pleas'd,
 And find thee knowing not of beasts alone,
 Which thou hast rightly nam'd, but of thyself
 Expressing well the sp'rit within thee free, 365
 My image, not imparted to the brute,
 Whose fellowship therefore unmeet for thee

Good rea
 And be
 Knew it
 And no fi
 Intended
 To see ho
 What nex
 Thy likene
 Thy wish
 He ende
 My earthl
 Which it h
 In that cele
 As with an
 Dazzled an
 Of sleep, w
 By nature a
 • Mine eyes
 Of fancy, m
 Abstract as i
 Though sleep
 Still glorious
 Who stoopin
 From thence
 And life-blo
 But suddenl
 The rib he fo
 Under his for
 Manlike, but
 That what see
 Mean, or in h
 And in her lo

Book VIII. PARADISE LOST. 213

Good reason was thou freely shouldst dislike,
 And be so minded still. I ere thou spak'st
 Knew it not good for man to be alone, 370
 And no such company as then thou saw'st
 Intended thee, for trial only brought,
 To see how thou could'st judge of fit and meet.
 What next I bring shall please thee, be assur'd
 Thy likeness, thy fit help, thy other self, 375
 Thy wish exactly to thy heart's desire.

He ended, or I heard no more, for now
 My earthly by his heav'nly overpower'd,
 Which it had long stood under, strain'd to th' height
 In that celestial colloquy sublime, 380

As with an object that excels the sense
 Dazzled and spent, sunk down, and sought repair
 Of sleep, which instantly fell on me, call'd
 By nature as in aid, and clos'd mine eyes.

*Mine eyes he clos'd, but open left the cell 385
 Of fancy, my internal sight, by which
 Abstract as in a trance methought I saw,
 Though sleeping, where I lay, I saw the shape
 Still glorious before whom awake I stood ;

Who stooping open'd my left side, and took 390
 From thence a rib, with cordial spirits warm,
 And life-blood streaming fresh. Wide was the wound
 But suddenly with flesh fill'd up and heal'd ;

The rib he form'd and fashion'd with his hands ;
 Under his forming hands a creature grew, 395
 Manlike, but different sex, so lovely fair,
 That what seem'd fair in all the world, seem'd now

Mean, or in her summ'd up, in her contain'd
 And in her looks, which from that time infus'd

Sweetness into my heart, unfelt before.*

400

She disappear'd, and left me dark; I waked

To find her, or for ever to deplore

Her loss, and other pleasures all abjure :

When out of hope, behold her, not far off,

Such as I saw her in my dream, adorn'd

405

With what all earth or heaven could bestow

*To make her amiable: On she came,

Led by her heav'nly Maker, though unseen,

And guided by his voice, nor uninform'd

Of nuptial sanctity and marriage rites :

410

Grace was in all her steps; heaven in her eye,

In every gesture dignity and love.*

I overjoy'd could not forbear aloud.

This turn hath made amends; thou hast fulfill'd

Thy words, Creator bounteous and benign;

415

Giver of all things fair, but fairest this

Of all thy gifts, nor enviest. I now see

Bone of my bone, flesh of my flesh; myself

Before me : Woman is her name, of Man

Extracted; for this cause he shall forego

420

Father and mother, and to' his wife adhere;

And they shall be one flesh, one heart, one soul.

* She heard me thus, and though divinely brought,

Yet innocence and virgin modesty,

Her virtue and the conscience of her worth,

425

That would be woo'd, and not unsought be won,

Not obvious, nor obtrusive, but retir'd,

The more desirable, or to say all,

Nature herself, though pure of sinful thought,

Wrought in her so, that seeing me, she turn'd;

430

I follow'd her, she what was honour knew,

And wi

My plea

I led her

And hap

Shed the

Gave sig

Joyous t

Whisper

Flung ro

Disportin

Sung spo

On his hi

Thus h

My story

Which I e

In all thin

As us'd o

Nor vehem

I mean of

Walks, and

Far otherw

Transporte

Commotio

Superior an

Against the

Yet well I

Of nature h

And inward

in outward

his image v

The charact

O'er other

And with obsequious majesty approv'd
My pleaded reason. To the nuptial bower
I led her blushing like the morn: all heaven,
And happy constellations on that hour
Shed their selectest influence; the earth
Gave sign of gratulation, and each hill;
Joyous the birds; fresh gales and gentle airs
Whisper'd it to the woods, and from their wings
Flung rose, flung odors from the spicy shrub,
Disporting, till the amorous bird of night
Sung spousal, and bid haste the evening star
On his hill top, to light the bridal lamp.

435

440

Thus have I told thee all my state, and brought
My story to the sum of earthly bliss
Which I enjoy, and must confess to find
In all things else delight indeed, but such
As us'd or not, works in the mind no change,
Nor vehement desire; these delicacies
I mean of taste, sight, smell, herbs, fruits, and flowers,
Walks, and the melody of birds; but here
Far otherwise, transported I behold,
Transported touch; here passion first I felt,
Commotion strange, in all enjoyments else
Superior and unmov'd, here only weak
Against the charm of beauty's pow'rful glance.
Yet well I understand in the prime end
Of nature her th' inferior, in the mind
And inward faculties, which most excel.
In outward also her resembling less
His image who made both, and less expressing
The character of that dominion given
O'er other creatures; yet when I approach

445

450

455

460

Her loveliness, so absolute she seems
 And in herself complete, so well to know 465
 Her own, that what she wills to do or say,
 Seems wisest, virtuousest, discreetest, best ;
 All higher knowlege in her presence falls
 Degraded, wisdom in discourse with her
 Loses discount'nanc'd, and like folly shews : 470
 Greatness of mind and nobleness their seat
 Build in her loveliest, and create an awe
 About her, as a guard angelic placed.*

To whom the angel with contracted brow.
 Nature, hath done her part ; do thou but thine, 475
 For what admir'st thou, what transports thee so,
 An outside ? Fair no doubt, and worthy well
 Thy cherishing, thy honouring, and thy love,
 Not thy subjection : weigh with her thyself ?
 * Then value : Oft-times nothing profits more 480
 Than self esteem, grounded on just and right,
 Well manag'd ; of that skill the more thou know'st,
 The more she will acknowledge thee her head,
 And to realities yield all her shows :
 Made so adorned for thy delight the more, 585
 So awful, that with honour thou may'st love
 Thy mate, who sees when thou art seen least wise.*
 But if the sense of touch whereby mankind
 Is propagated seem such dear delight
 Beyond all other, think the same vouchsaf'd 490
 To cattle and each beast ; which would not be
 To them made common and divulg'd, if ought
 Therein enjoy'd were worthy to subdue
 The soul of man, or passion in him move.
 * What high'er in her society thou find'st 500

Attract
 In lov
 Wherein
 The tho
 In rea'so
 By whic
 * To
 Neither
 In procr
 (Thoug
 And wit
 So much
 Those th
 From all
 And swee
 Union of
 (Harmon
 More grat
 Yet these
 What inw
 Who meet
 Variousl
 Approve t
 To love th
 Leads up t
 Bear with
 Love not th
 Express th
 Irradiance,
 To whor
 Celestial ro

Attractive, human, rational, love still;
 In loving thou dost well, in passion not,
 Wherein true love consists not; * love refines
 The thoughts, and heart enlarges, hath his seat
 In rea'son, and is judicious, is the scale
 By which to heav'nly love thou may'st ascend.*

505

* To whom thus half abash'd Adam reply'd.
 Neither her outside form'd so fair, nor ought
 In procreation common to all kinds
 (Though higher of the genial bed by far,
 And with mysterious reverence I deem)

510

So much delights me, as those graceful acts,
 Those thousand decencies that daily flow
 From all her words and actions mix'd with love
 And sweet compliance, which declare unfeign'd
 Union of mind, or in us both one soul;
 (Harmony to behold in wedded pair *)

515

More grateful than harmonious sound to th' ear.
 Yet these subject not; I to thee disclose
 What inward thence I feel, not therefore foil'd,
 Who meet with various objects, from the sense
 Variously representing; yet still free
 Approve the best, and follow what I approve.

520

To love thou'blam'st me not, for love thou say'st
 Leads up to heav'n, is both the way and guide;
 Bear with me then, if lawful what I ask;
 Love not the heav'nly Spi'rits, and how their love
 Expresses they, by looks only', or do they mix
 Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch?

525

To whom the angel with a smile that glow'd
 Celestial rosy red, love's proper hue,

530

Answer'd. Let it suffice thee that thou know'st

Us happy, and without love no happiness.

* Whatever pure thou in the body enjoy'st

(And pure thou wert created) we enjoy

In eminence, and obstacle find none

535

Of membrane, joint, or limb, exclusive bars;

Easier than air with air, if Spirits embrace,

Total they mix, union of pure with pure.*

But I can now no more; the parting sun

Hesperian sets, my signal to depart.

540

Be strong, live happy, and love, but first of all

Him whom to love is to obey, and keep

His great command; take heed lest passion sway

Thy judgment to do ought, which else free will

Would not admit; thine and of all thy sons

545

The weal or woe in thee is plac'd; beware.

I in thy persevering shall rejoice,

And all the blest: stand fast; to stand or fall

Free in thine own arbitrement it lies.

Perfect within, no outward aid require;

550

And all temptation to transgresses repel.

So saying, he arose; whom Adam thus

Follow'd with benediction. Since to part,

Go heav'nly Guest, ethereal Messenger,

sent from whose sov'reign goodness I adore.

555

Gentle to me and affable hath been

Thy condescension, and shall be' honour'd ever

With grateful memory: thou to mankind

Be good and friendly still, and oft return.

So parted they, the angel up to heaven

560

From the thick shade, and Adam to his bower.

The end of the eighth book.

No

Ver. 22.

giving

Ver. 23.

compar

Ver. 29.

Ver. 32.

Ver. 37.

conceive

Ver. 49.

Ver. 5.

Ver. 118.

Ver. 121.

Ver. 150.

derstandi

Ver. 163.

Ver. 185.

Never clo

Ver. 229.

Ver. 298.

Ver. 308.

as their L



Notes on PARADISE LOST.

B O O K VIII.

- Ver. 22. *To officiate light.*—To perform this office in giving light.
- Ver. 23. *This punctual Spot.*—Which is but a Point, compared to the universe.
- Ver. 29. *Greater so manifold.*—So many times bigger.
- Ver. 31. *Sedentary.*—Sitting still, not moving.
- Ver. 37. *Incorporeal Speed.*—Such Speed as can scarce be conceived in any thing Corporeal.
- Ver. 49. *Auditress.*—Hearer.
- Ver. 5. *Numberless.*—To describe which Number fails.
- Ver. 118. *Transpicious.*—Transparent.
- Ver. 121. *Reciprocal.*—Each giving light to the other.
- Ver. 150. *Pure intelligence.*—A Spirit endowd with understanding.
- Ver. 163. *Prime.*—Chief.—*Fume.*—Smoke.
- Ver. 185. *Imbued.*—Tinctured. *Bring no Satiety.*—
Never cloy.
- Ver. 229. *Lapse*—Sliding down.
- Ver. 298. *Interdiction.*—Prohibition.
- Ver. 308. *Pay thee fealty.*—The homage they owe thee as their Lord.

- Ver. 314. *Cowering* — Bending, bowing themselves.
 Ver. 315. *Blandishment* — Making court.
 Ver. 380. *Calloquy*. — Conversation.
 Ver. 387. *Abstract*. — Abstracted from the Body.
 Ver. 425. *Conscience*. — Consciousness.
 Ver. 427. *Obvious* — Forward. *Obtrusive*. — Thrusting herself on me. *Retired*. — Modest, backward.
 Ver. 432. *Obsequious*. — Yielding, obedient.
 Ver. 437. *Gratulation*. — Congratulation.
 Ver. 479. *With contracted Brow*. — That is frowning.
 Ver. 528. *Do they mix Irradiance*. — As it were, dart into one another: by a *Virtual*. — Something equivalent to or, by an *immediate touching* each other?
 Ver. 540. *Hesperian sets*. — Sets in the West.
 Ver. 546. *The Weal*. — The Welfare.
 Ver. 549. *Arbitrement*. — Choice.
 Ver. 553. *Benediction*. — Thanks.



P
 Satan
 tur
 pen
 the
 plac
 the
 shou
 circ
 rath
 yiel
 first
 Eve
 Serp
 such
 a ce
 reas
 to th
 bidde
 and a
 the t
 Adam
 persua
 perce
 perish

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK IX.

THE ARGUMENT.

Satan having compass'd the earth, with meditated guile returns as a mist by night into Paradise, enters into the serpent sleeping. Adam and Eve in the morning go forth to their labours, which Eve proposes to divide in several places, each labouring apart: Adam consents not, alledging the danger, lest that enemy, of whom they were forewarn'd, should attempt her found alone: Eve loath to be thought not circumspect or firm enough, urges her going apart, the rather desirous to make trial of her strength; Adam at last yields: The Serpent finds her alone; his subtile approach, first gazing, then speaking, with much flattery extolling Eve above all other creatures. Eve wond'ring to hear the Serpent speak, asks how he attain'd to human speech and such understanding; the Serpent answers, that by tasting of a certain tree in the garden he attain'd both to speech and reason, till then void of both: Eve requires him to bring her to that tree, and finds it to be the tree of knowledge forbidden: The Serpent now grown bolder, with many wiles and arguments induces her at length to eat; she pleas'd with the taste deliberates a while whether to impart thereof to Adam or not, at last brings him of the fruit, relates what persuaded her to eat thereof: Adam at first amaz'd, but perceiving her lost, resolves through vehemence of fruit to perish with her: and extenuating the trespass eats also.

the fruit: The effects thereof in them both: they seek to cover their nakedness; then fall to variance and accusation of one another.

NO more of talk where God or angel guest
 With Man, as with his friend, familiar used
 To sit indulgent, and with him partake
 Rural repast, permitting him the while
 Venial discourse unblam'd: I now must change 5
 Those notes to tragic; foul distrust, and breach
 Disloyal on the part of Man, revolt,
 And disobedience; on the part of heaven.
 Now alienated, distance and distaste,
 And judgment given, that brought into this world 10
 Sin and her shadow Death, and Misery.

The sun was sunk, and after him the star
 Of Hesperus, whose office is to bring
 Twilight on earth, and now from end to end
 Night's hemisphere had veil'd the horizon round: 15
 When Satan who late fled before the threats
 Of Gabriel out of Eden, now improv'd
 In meditated fraud and malice bent
 On Man's destruction, maugre what might hap
 Of heavier on himself, fearless return'd. 20
 By night he fled, and at midnight return'd
 From compassing the earth. There was a place,
 Now not, though sin, not time, first wrought the change,
 Where Tigris at the foot of Paradise
 Into a gulf shot under ground, till part 25
 Rose up a fountain by the tree of life.
 In with the river sunk, and with it rose

Book

Satan i

Where

Confid

Most o

The fen

Him af

To ente

From fl

Whatev

Thus be

His bur

O ear

Terrestri

That shin

Light ab

In thee o

*With w

If I coul

Of hill, a

Now lan

Rocks, d

Find plac

Pleasures

Torment

Bane, and

But neithe

To dwell,

Nor hope

By what I

As I, thou

For only in

To my rel

Satan involv'd in rising mist, then fought
 Where to lie hid; and with inspection deep 30
 Consider'd every creature, which of all
 Most opportune might serve his wiles, and found
 The serpent subtlest beast of all the field.
 Him after long debate, his sentence chose
 To enter, and his dark suggestions hide 35
 From sharpest sight: for in the wily snake,
 Whatever sleights none would suspicious mark.
 Thus he resolv'd, but first from inward grief
 His bursting passion into plaints thus pour'd.

O earth, how like to heav'n, if not preferr'd! 40
 Terrestrial heaven, danced round by other heavens
 That shine, yet bear their bright officious lamps,
 Light above light, for thee alone, as seems,
 In thee concentrating all their precious beams.
 *With what delight could I have walk'd theeround, 45
 If I could joy in ought, sweet interchange
 Of hill, and valley, rivers, woods and plains,
 Now land, now sea, and shores with forest crown'd,
 Rocks, dens, and caves! But I in none of these
 Find place or refuge; and the more I see
 Pleasures about me, so much more I feel 50
 Torment within; all good to me becomes
 Bane, and in heav'n much worse would be my state.
 But neither here seek I, no nor in heaven
 To dwell, unless by mast'ring heav'n's supreme;
 Nor hope to be myself less miserable 55
 By what I seek, but others to make such
 As I, though thereby worse to me redound: *
 For only in destroying I find ease
 To my relentless thoughts: and he destroy'd,

Or won to what may work his utter loss, 60
 For whom all this was made, all this will soon
 Follow, as to him link'd in weal or woe.
 In woe then; that destruction wide may range:
 To me shall be the glory sole among
 Th' infernal Pow'rs, in one day to have marr'd 65
 What he Almighty siled, six nights and days
 Continued making, and who knows how long
 Before had been contriving, though perhaps
 Not longer than since I in one night freed
 From servitude inglorious well nigh half 70
 Th' angelic name, and thinner left the throng
 Of his adorers: he to be aveng'd,
 And to repair his numbers thus impair'd,
 Determin'd to advance into our room
 A creature form'd of earth, and him endow, 75
 Exalted from so base original,
 With heav'nly spoils, our spoils. What he decreed
 He effected. Man he made, and for him built
 Magnificent this world, and earth his seat,
 Him lord pronounc'd, and, O indignity!
 80 Subjected to his service Angel wings,
 And flaming ministers to watch and tend
 Their earthly charge. Of these the vigilance
 I dread, and to elude, thus wrapt in mist
 Of midnight vapour glide obscure, and pry
 85 In every bush and brake where hap may find
 The serpent sleeping, in whose mazy folds
 To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.
 *O foul descent! That I who erst contended
 90 With Gods to sit the high'est, am now constrain'd

Into a
 This eff
 That to
 But wha
 Descend
 As high
 To basel
 Bitter er
 Let it; I
 Since hig
 Provokes
 Of Heave
 Whom u
 From duf
 So sayin
 Like a bla
 His midni
 The serpen
 In labyrin
 His head t
 Not yet in
 Nor no cer
 Fearless, un
 The devil e
 In heart or
 With aft in
 Disturb'd n
 Now wh
 In Eden on
 Their morn
 From th' ear
 To the Creat

Into a beast, and mixt with bestial slime,
This essence to incarnate and imbrute,
That to the height of deity aspir'd.
But what will not ambition and revenge
Descend to? Who aspires must down as low 95

As high he soar'd, obnoxious first or last
To basest things. Revenge, at first though sweet,
Bitter ere long back on itself recoils.*

Let it; I reckon not, so it light well aim'd,
Since higher I fall short, on him who next 100
Provokes my envy, this new favourite

Of Heaven, this man of clay, son of despite,
Whom us the more to spite his Maker rais'd
From dust: spite then with spite is best repaid.

So saying, through each thicket dank or dry, 105
Like a black mist low creeping he held on
His midnight search, where soonest he might find
The serpent: him fast sleeping soon he found

In labyrinth of many a round self-roll'd,
His head the midst, well stor'd with subtle wiles: 110

Not yet in horrid shade or dismal den,
Nor no cent yet, but on the grassy herb
Fearless, unfear'd he slept: in at his mouth
The devil enter'd, and his brutal sense,
In heart or head, possessing soon inspired 115

With act intelligential; but his sleep
Disturb'd not, waiting close th' approach of morn.

Now when as sacred light began to dawn
In Eden on the humid flow'rs, that breath'd
Their morning incense, when all things that breathe, 120
From th' earth's great altar send up silent praise
To the Creator, and his nostrils fill

With grateful smell, forth came the human pair,
 And join'd their vocal worship to the choir 125
 Of creatures wanting voice; that done, partake
 The season, prime for sweetest scents and airs:
 Then commune how that day they best may ply
 Their growing work: for much their work outgrew
 The hands dispatch of two, gard'ning so wide, 130
 And Eve first to her husband thus began.

Adam, well may we labour still to dress
 This garden, still to tend plant, herb and flower,
 Our pleasant task injoin'd, but till more hands
 Aid us, the work under our labour grows. 135
 Let us divide our labours, thou where choice
 Leads thee, or where most needs remain, while I
 In yonder spring of roses intermix'd
 With myrtle, find what to redress till noon:
 For while so near each other thus all day 140
 Our task we chuse, what wonder if so near
 Looks intervene and smiles, or object new
 Casual discourse draw on, which intermits
 Our day's work brought to little, though begun
 Early, and th' hour of supper comes unearn'd. 145

To whom mild answer Adam thus return'd.
 Sole Eve, associate sole, to me beyond
 Compare above all living creatures dear,
 Well hast thou motion'd, well thy thoughts employ'd
 How we might best fulfil the work which here 150
 God hath assign'd us, nor of me shalt pass
 *Upris'd: for nothing lovelier can be found
 In woman, than to study household good,
 And good works in her husband to promote.
 Yet not so strictly hath our Lord impos'd 155

Labour,
 Refresh
 Food of
 Of looks
 To brute
 Love not
 For not t
 He made
 These pa
 Will kee
 As we ne
 Assist us:
 Thee satia
 *For solit
 And shor
 But other
 Befal thee
 What hath
 Envyng o
 Despairing
 By fly affa
 Watches, r
 His wish a
 Hopeless to
 to other s
 Whether h
 Our fealty
 Conjugal lo
 That gave t
 The wife, v
 afeist and se
 Who guard

Labour, as to debar us when we need
Refreshment, whether food, or talk between,
Food of the mind, or this sweet intercourse
Of looks and smiles, for smiles from reason flow,
To brute deny'd, and are of love the food, 160
Love not the lowest end of human life.

For not to irksome toil, but to delight
He made us, and delight to reason join'd.*
These paths and bow'rs doubt not but our joint hands
Will keep from wilderness with ease, as wide 165
As we need walk, till younger hands ere long

Assist us: but if much converse perhaps
Thee satiate, to short absence I could yield:
*For solitude sometimes is best society,
And short retirement urges sweet return.* 170

But other doubt possesses me, lest harm
Befal thee sever'd from me; for thou know'st
What hath been warn'd us, what malicious foe
Envyng our happiness, and of his own
Despairing, seeks to work us woe and shame 175
By sly assault; and somewhere nigh at hand

Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find
His wish and best advantage, us asunder,
Hopeless to circumvent us join'd, where each
No other speedy aid might lend at need; 180

Whether his first design be to withdraw
Our fealty from God, or to disturb
Conjugal love, leave not the faithful side
That gave thee being, still shades thee and protects.

The wife, where danger or dishonour lurks,
185
Safest and seemliest by her husband stays,
Who guards her, or with her the worst endures.

To whom the virgin majesty of Eve,
As one who loves, and some unkindness meets,
With sweet austere composure thus reply'd. 190

Offspring of Heav'n and Earth, and all Earth's Lord.
That such an enemy we have, who seeks
Our ruin, both by thee inform'd I learn,
And from the parting angel over-heard,
As in a shady nook I stood behind, 195
Just then return'd at shut of evening flowers
But that thou shouldst my firmness therefore doubt
To God or thee, because we have a foe
May tempt it, I expected not to hear.
His violence thou fear'st not, being such 200
As we, not capable of death or pain,
Can either not receive, or can repel.
His fraud is then thy fear, which plain infers
Thy equal fear that my firm faith and love
Can by his fraud be shaken or seduc'd : 205
Thoughts, which how found they harbour in thy breast,
Adam's misthought of her to thee so dear?

To whom with healing words Adam reply'd.
Daughter of God and Man, immortal Eve,
For such thou art, from sin and blame entire : 210
Nor dissident of thee do I dissuade
Thy absence from my sight, but to avoid
Th' attempt itself, intended by our foe,
Though ineffectual sound. Misdeem not then,
If such affront I labour to avert 215
From thee alone, which on us both at once
The enemy, though bold, will hardly dare,
Or daring, first on me th' assault shall light.
Nor thou his malice and false guile condemn : 220

Subtle he needs must be, who could seduce
Angels; nor think superfluous others aid.

*I from the influence of thy looks receive
Access in every virtue, in thy sight

More wise, more watchful, stronger, if need were 225

Of outward strength; while shame, thou looking on,
Shame to be overcome or over-reach'd

Would utmost vigour raise, and rais'd unite.

Why shouldst not thou like sense within thee feel

When I am present, and thy trial choose 230

With me, best witness of thy virtue try'd?*

So spake domestic Adam in his care

And matrimonial love; but Eve, who thought

Less attributed to her faith sincere,

Thus her reply with accent sweet renew'd. 235

If this be our condition, thus to dwell

In narrow circuit straiten'd by a foe,

Subtle or violent, we not indued

Singl^e with like defence, wherever met,

How are we happy, still in fear of harm? 240

Let us not then suspect our happy state

Left so imperfect by the Maker wife,

As not secure to single or combin'd.

Frail is our happiness, if this be so,

And Eden were no Eden thus expos'd. 245

To whom thus Adam fervently reply'd.

O Woman, best are all things as the will

Of God ordain'd them, his creating hand

Nothing imperfect or deficient left

Of all that he created, much less Man, 250

Ought that might his happy state secure,

Secure from outward force; within himself
The danger lies, yet lies within his power :
Against his will he can receive no harm.
But God left free the will, for what obeys
Reason, is free, and reason he made right,
But bid her well beware, and still erect,
Left by some fair appearing good surpris'd
She dictate false, and misinform the will
To do what God expressly hath forbid.*
Not then mistrust, but tender love enjoins,
That I should mind thee oft, and mind thou me.
Firm we subsist, yet possible to swerve.
Seek not temptation then, which to avoid
Were better, and most likely, if from me
Thou sever not : trial will come unsought.
Wouldst thou approve thy constancy, approve
First thy obedience; th' other who can know,
Not seeing thee attempted, who attest ?
But if thou think, trial unsought may find
Us both securer than thus warn'd thou seem'st,
Go ; for thy stay, not free, absents thee more ;
Go in thy native innocence, rely
On what thou hast of virtue, summon all,
For God tow'ards thee hath done his part, do thine.
So spake the patriarch of mankind ; but Eve
Persisted ; yet submits, though last, reply'd.
With thy permission then, and thus forewarn'd
Chiefly by what thy own last reasoning words
Touch'd only, that our trial, when least sought,
May find us both perhaps far less prepar'd,
The willinger I go, nor much expect
A foe so proud will first the weaker seek ;

So bent, the more shall shame him his repulse.

285

Thus saying, from her husband's hand, her hand
Soft she withdrew, and took her to the groves.

* Her, long with ardent look his eyes pursued
Delighted, but desiring more her stay.

Oft he to her his charge of quick return

290

Repeated, she to him as oft engag'd

To be return'd by noon amid the bower,

And all things in best order to invite

Noontide repast, or afternoon's repose.

O much deceiv'd, much failing, hapless Eve!

295

Thou never from that hour in Paradise

Found'st either sweet repast, or sound repose!*

For now, and since first break of dawn the fiend,

Mere serpent in appearance, forth was come,

And on his quest, where likeliest he might find

300

The only two of mankind, but in them

The whole included race, his purpos'd prey.

In bow'r and field he sought, where any tuft

Of grove or garden-plot more pleasant lay,

Their tendance or plantation for delight:

305

By fountain or by shady rivulet

He sought them both, but wish'd his hap might find

Eve separate: he wish'd, but not with hope

Of what so seldom chanc'd, when to his wish,

Beyond his hope, Eve separate he spies,

310

Veil'd in a cloud of fragrance, where she stood,

Half spy'd, so thick the roses bushing round

About her glow'd, oft stooping to support

Each flow'r of slender stalk, mindless the while

Herself, though fairest unsupported flower,

315

From her best prop so far, and storm so high.

Nearer he drew, and many a walk travers'd

Of stateliest covert, cedar, pine, or palm,

Then voluble and bold, now hid, now seen

Among thick-woven arborets and flowers.

310

Much pleasure took the Serpent to behold

*This flow'ry plat, the sweet recess of Eve

Thus early, thus alone: her heav'nly form

Angelic, but more soft, and feminine,

Her graceful innocence, her every air

325

Of gesture or least action overaw'd

His malice, and with rapine sweet, bereav'd

His fierceness of the fierce intent it brought:

That space the Evil one abstracted stood

From his own evil, and for the time remain'd

330

Stupidly good, of enmity disarm'd,

Of guile, of hate, of envy, of revenge:

But the hot Hell that always in him burns,

Though in mid-heav'n, soon ended his delight,

And tortures him now more, the more he feels

335

Of pleasure not for him ordain'd: *then soon

Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts

Of mischief, gratulating, thus excites.

Thoughts, whi her have ye led me! with what sweet

Compulsion thus transported to forget

340

What hither brought me! Hate, not love nor hope

Of Paradise for hell, hope here to taste

Of pleasure, but all pleasure to destroy,

Save what is in destroying: other joy

To me is lost. Then let me not let pass

345

Occasion which now smiles; behold alone

The woman, opportune to all attempts,

Her husband, for I view far round, not nigh,
 She fair, divinely fair, fit love for Gods,
 Not terrible, though terror be in love 350
 And beauty, not approach'd by stronger hate.
 Hate stronger, under show of love well feign'd,
 The way which to her ruin now I tend.

So spake the enemy of mankind, inclos'd
 In serpent, inmate bad, and toward Eve 355

* Address'd his way, not with indented wave,
 Prone on the ground, as since, but on his rear,
 Circular base of rising folds, that tower'd
 Fold above fold a surging maze, his head
 Crested aloft, and carbuncle his eyes; 360

With burnish'd neck of verdant gold, crest
 Amidst his circling spires.* With tract oblique
 At first, as one who sought access, but fear'd
 To interrupt, side-long he works his way.

As when a ship by skilful steersman wrought 365
 Nigh river's mouth or foreland, where the wind
 Veers oft, as oft so steers, and shifts her sail:

So varied he, and of his tortuous train
 Curl'd many a wanton wreath in sight of Eve;
 And bolder now, uncall'd before her stood, 370

But as in gaze admiring: oft he bow'd
 His turret crest, and sleek enamell'd neck,

Fawning, and lick'd the ground whereon she trod.
 His gentle dumb expression turn'd at length
 The eye of Eve to mark his play: he glad 375

Of her attention gain'd, with serpent tongue
 Organic, or impulse of vocal air,

His fraudulent temptation thus began.

* Wonder not, sov'reign Mistress, if perhaps
 Thou canst, who art sole wonder; much less arm 380
 Thy looks, the heav'n of mildness, with disdain,
 Displeas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze
 Insatiate, I thus single, nor have fear'd
 Thy awful brow, more awful thus retir'd.
 Fairest resemblance of thy Maker fair, 385
 Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine
 By gift, and thy celestial beauty' adore
 With ravishment beheld, there best beheld
 Where universally admir'd: but here
 In this inclosure wild, these beasts among, 390
 Beholders rude, and shallow to discern
 Half what in thee is fair, one man except,
 Who sees thee: (And what is one?) Who shouldst be seen
 A Goddess among Gods, ador'd and serv'd
 By angels numberless, thy daily train. * 395
 So glaz'd the Tempter, and his proem tun'd.
 Into the heart of Eve his words made way,
 Though at the voice much marvelling. At length
 Not unamaz'd she thus in answer spake.
 What may this mean? Language of man pronounc'd 400
 By tongue of brute, and human sense express'd?
 The first at least of these I thought deny'd
 To beasts, whom God on their creation-day
 Created mute to all articulate sound:
 The latter I demur, for in their looks 405
 Much reas'on, and in their actions oft appears.
 Thee, Serpent, subtlest beast of all the field
 I knew, but not with human voice indued;
 Redouble then this miracle, and say,
 How cam'st thou speakable of mute, and how 410

To me so friendly grown above the rest
Of brutal kind, that daily are in sight :
Say, for such wonder claims attention due.

To whom the guileful Tempter thus reply'd.
Empress of this fair world, resplendent Eve, 415
I was at first as other beasts that graze

The trodden herb, of abject thoughts and low,
As was my food ; nor ought but food discern'd
Or sex, and apprehended nothing high :
Till on a day roving the field, I chanc'd 420
A goodly tree far distant to behold

Loaden with fruit of fairest colours mix'd,
Ruddy and gold : I nearer drew to gaze ;
When from the boughs a savory odor blew :
To satisfy the sharp desire I had, 425

About the mossy trunk I wound me soon,
For high from ground the branches would require
Thy utmost reach or Adam's : Round the tree
All other beasts that saw, with like desire
Longing and envying stood, but could not reach. 430

Amid the tree now got, to eat my fill
I spar'd not, for such pleasure till that hour
At feed or fountain never had I found.
Sated at length, ere long I might perceive
Strange alteration in me, to degree 435

Of reason in my inward pow'rs, and speech
Wanted not long, though to this shape retain'd.
Thenceforth to speculations high or deep
I turn'd my thoughts, and with capacious mind
Consider'd all things visible in heaven, 440

Or earth or middle, all things fair and good :
But all that fair and good in thy divine

Semblance, and in thy beauty's heav'nly ray
United I beheld; no fair to thine

Equivalent or second, which compell'd 445

Me thus, though importune perhaps, to come
And gaze, and worship thee of right declar'd
Sov'reign of creatures, universal Dame.

So talk'd the spirited fly snake; and Eve
Yet more amaz'd unwary thus reply'd. 450

Serpent, thy overpraising leaves in doubt
The virtue of that fruit, in thee first prov'd:
But say, where grows the tree, from hence how far?

To whom the wily adder, blithe and glad.

Empress, the way is ready, and not long, 455

Beyond a row of myrtles, on a flat,
Fast by a fountain, one small thicket past
Of blowing myrrh and balm; if thou accept
My conduct I can bring thee thither soon.

Lead then, said Eve. He leading swiftly roll'd 460

In tangles, and made intricate seem straight,
To mischief swift. Hope elevates, and joy
Brightens his crest; as when a wand'ring fire,
Compact of unctuous vapour, which the night
Condenses, and the cold environs round,

Kindled through agitation to a flame, 465

Misleads the' amaz'd night wanderer from his way;

So glister'd the dire Snake, and into fraud

Led Eve our credulous mother, to the tree

Of prohibition, root of all our woe; 470

Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spake.

Serpent, we might have spar'd our coming hither,

Fruitless to me, though fruit be here t' excess,

The credit of whose virtue rest with thee,

Book IX. P A R A D I S E L O S T. 237

Wondrous indeed, it cause of such effects. 475

But of this tree we may not taste nor touch ;
God so commanded, and left that command
Sole daughter of his voice. The rest, we live
Law to ourselves, our reason is our law.

To whom the Tempter guilefully reply'd. 480
Indeed ? Hath God then said that of the fruit
Of all these garden trees ye shall not eat,
Yet lords declar'd of all in earth or air ?

To whom thus Eve yet sinless. Of the fruit
Of each tree in the garden we may eat, 485
But of the fruit of this fair tree amidst
The garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat
Thereof, nor shall ye touch it, lest ye die.

She scarce had said, though brief, when now more bold
The Tempter all impassion'd thus began. 490

O sacred, wise, and wisdom-giving plant ;
Mother of science, now I feel thy power
Within me clear, even to trace the ways
Of highest agents, deem'd however wise.
Queen of this universe, do not believe 495

Those rigid threats of death ; ye shall not die :
How should ye ? By the fruit ? It gives you life
To knowledge ; by the threatner ? Look on me,
Me who have touch'd and tasted, yet both live,
And life more perfect have attain'd than fate 500

Meant me, by vent'ring higher than my lot.
Shall that be shut to Man, which to the Beast
Is open ? Or will God incense his ire
For such a petty trespass, and not praise
Rather your dauntless virtue, whom the pain 505
Of death denounc'd, whatever thing death be,

Deterr'd not from achieving what might lead
To happier life, knowledge of good and evil;
Of good, how just? Of evil, if what is evil
Be real, why not known, since easier shunn'd? 510
God therefore cannot hurt you, and be just.

Why then was this forbid? Why but to awe,
Why but to keep you low and ignorant,
His worshippers. He knows that in the day
Ye eat thereof, your eyes that seem so clear, 515

Yet are but dim, shall perfectly be then
Open'd and clear'd, and ye shall be as Gods,
Knowing both good and evil as they know.
That ye shall be as Gods, since I as Man,
Internal Man, is but proportion meet 520

I of brute human, ye of human Gods:
So shall ye die perhaps, by putting off
Human, to put on Gods; death to be wish'd,
Though threaten'd, which no worse than this can bring.
Goddefs human: reach then, and freely taste. 525

He ended, and his words replete with guile
Into her heart too easy entrance won.
Fix'd on the fruit she gaz'd, which to behold
Might tempt alone, and in her ears the sound
Yet rung of his persuasive words, impregn'd 530
With reason, to her seeming, and with truth.

Mean while the hour of noon drew on, and wak'd
An eager appetite, rais'd by the smell
So savory of that fruit, which with desire,
Inclinable now grown, to touch or taste, 535
Solicited her longing eye: yet first

Pausing a while, thus to herself she mus'd.
Great are thy virtues, doubtless, best of fruits,

Though kept from man, and worthy to be admir'd,
Whose taste, too long forborn, at first essay 540

Gave elocution to the mute, and taught
The tongue not made for speech to speak thy praise:
Thy praise he also who forbids thy use,
Conceals not from us, naming thee the tree
Of knowledge, knowledge both good and evil. 545

In plain then, what forbids he but to know,
Forbids us good, forbids us to be wise?
Such prohibitions bind not. But if death
Bind us with after-bands, what profits then
Our inward freedom? In the day we eat 550
Of this fair fruit, our doom is, we shall die.

How dies the Serpent? He hath eat'n and lives,
And knows, and speaks, and reasons, and discerns,
Irrational till then. For us alone
Was death invented? Or to us deny'd 555

This intellectual food, for beasts reserv'd?
For beasts it seems: yet that one beast which first
Hath tasted, envies not, but brings with joy
The good befall'n him; author unsuspect,
Friendly to man, far from deceit or guile. 560

What fear I then, rather what know to fear
Under this ignorance of good and evil,
Of God or death, of law or penalty?
Here grows the cure of all, this fruit divine,
Fair to the eye, inviting to the taste, 565

Of virtue to make wise: what hinders then
To reach, and feed at once body and mind!

So saying, her rash hand in evil hour
Forth reaching to the fruit, she pluck'd, she eat:

* Earth felt the wound, and nature from her seat 570

Sighing through all her works gave signs of woe,
 That all was lost * Back to the thicket flunk
 The guilty Serpent, and well might, for Eve
 Intent now wholly on her taste, nought else
 Regarded, such delight till then, as seem'd, 575
 In fruit she never tasted, whether true
 Or fancy'd so, through expectation high
 Of knowledge, nor was God-head from her thought.
 Greedily she ingorg'd without restraint,
 And knew not eating death. Sate at length, 580
 And heighten'd as with wine, jocond and boon,
 Thus to herself she pleasantly began.

O sov'reign, virtuous, precious of all trees,
 In Paradise, henceforth my early care,
 Not without song, each morning, and due praise, 585
 Shall tend thee, and the fertile burden ease
 Of thy full branches offer'd free to all;
 Till dieted by thee I grow mature
 In knowledge, as the Gods who all things know.
 Best guide; not following thee I had remain'd 590
 In ignorance. Thou open'st wisdom's way,
 And giv'st access, though secret she retire.

And I perhaps am secret; Heav'n is high,
 High, and remote to see from thence distinct
 Each thing on earth. But to Adam in what sort 595
 * Shall I appear? Shall I to him make known
 As yet my change, and give him to partake
 Full happiness with me, or rather not,
 But keep the odds of knowledge in my power
 Without copartner? So to add what wants 600
 In female sex, the more to draw his love,
 And render me more equal, and perhaps,

A thing not undefirable, sometime
Superior; for inferior who is free? 605

This may be well: but what if God have seen,
And death ensue? Then I shall be no more, 610

And Adam wedded to another Eve,
Shall live with her enjoying, I extinct;

A death to think. Confirm'd then I resolve,
Adam shall share with me in bliss or woe: 615

So dear I love him, that with him all deaths
I could endure, without him live no life.*

So saying, from the tree her step she turn'd;
But first low reverence done, as to the Power
That dwelt within, whose presence had infus'd 620

Into the plant sciential sap, deriv'd
From nectar, drink of Gods. Adam the while
Waiting desirous her return, had wove
Of choicest flow'rs a garland to adorn
Hertresses, and her rural labours crown. 625

Great joy he promis'd to his thoughts, and new
Solace in her return, so long delay'd:
Yet oft his heart, divine of something ill,
Misgave him; he the faltring measure felt;
And forth to meet her, went the way she took 630

That morn when first they parted. By the tree
Of knowledge he must pass, there he her met,
Scarce from the tree returning; in her hand
A bough of fairest fruit, that downy smil'd,
New gather'd, and ambrosial smell diffus'd. 635

To him she hasted. In her face excuse
Came prologue, and apology too prompt,
Which with bland words at will she thus address'd.

Hast thou not wonder'd, Adam, at my stay?
 Thee I have mis'd, and thought it long, depriv'd 640
 Thy presence, agony of love till now
 Not felt, nor shall be twice, for never more
 Mean I to try, what rash untry'd I fought,
 The pain of absence from thy sight. But strange
 Hath been the cause, and wonderful to hear: 645
 This tree is not as we are told, a tree
 Of danger tasted, nor to evil unknown
 Opening the way, but of divine effect
 To open eyes, and make them Gods who taste;
 And hath been tasted such. The serpent wise 650
 Or not restrain'd as we, or not obeying,
 Hath eaten of the fruit, and is become,
 Not dead, as we are threaten'd; but thenceforth
 Indued with human voice and human sense,
 Reason to admiration, and with me 655
 Persuasively hath so prevail'd, that I
 Have also tasted, and have also found
 Th' effects to correspond, opener mine eyes,
 Dim erst, dilated spirits, ampler heart,
 And growing up to Godhead; which for thee 660
 Chiefly I fought, without thee can despise.
 For bliss, as thou hast part, to me is bliss,
 Tedious, unshar'd with thee, and odious soon.
 Thou therefore also taste, that equal lot
 May join us, equal joy, as equal love; 665
 Lest thou not tasting, different degree
 Disjoin us, and I then too late renounce
 Deity for thee, when fate will not permit.
 Thus Eve with count'nance blithe her story told:
 But in her cheek distemper flashing glow'd. 670

On th' other side, Adam, soon as he heard
The fatal trespass done by Eve, amaz'd,
Astonied stood and blank, while horror-chill
Ran through his veins, and all his joints relax'd.
From his slack hand the garland wreath'd for Eve 675
Down dropt, and all the faded roses shed.
Speechless he stood and pale, till thus at length,
First to himself he inward silence broke.

* O fairest of creation, last and best
Of all God's works. Creature in whom excell'd 680
Whatever can to sight or thought be form'd,
Holy, divine, good, amiable, or sweet!
How art thou lost, how on a sudden lost,
Defac'd, deflower'd, and now to death devote?
Rather how hast thou yielded to transgress 685
The strict forbiddance, how to violate
The sacred fruit forbid? Some cursed fraud
Of enemy hath beguil'd thee, yet unknown,
And me with thee hath ruin'd, for with thee
Certain my resolution is to die: 690
How can I live without thee, how forego
Thy sweet converse and love so dearly join'd,
To live again in these wild woods forlorn?
Should God create another Eve, and I
Another rib afford, yet loss of thee 695
Would never from my heart. No no, I feel
The link of nature draw me: flesh of flesh,
Bone of my bone thou art, and from thy state
Mine never shall be parted, bliss or woe.*

So having said, as one from sad dismay 700
Recomforted, and after thoughts disturb'd

Submitting to what seem'd remediless,
Thus in calm mood his words to Eve he turn'd.

Bold deed thou hast presum'd, adventurous Eve,
And peril great provok'd, who thus hast dar'd, 705
Had it been only coveting to eye

That sacred fruit, sacred to abstinence,
Much more to taste it under ban to touch.

But past who can recal, or done undo ?
Not God omnipotent, nor Fate ; yet so 710
Perhaps thou shalt not die : perhaps the fact

Is not so heinous now, foretasted fruit,
Profan'd first by the serpent, by him first
Made common and unhallow'd ere our taste :

Nor yet on him found deadly, he yet lives, 715
Lives, as thou saidst, and gains to live as Man,
Higher degree of life, inducement strong

To us, as likely tasting to attain

Proportional ascent, which cannot be
But to be Gods, or Angels, Demi-Gods. 720

Nor can I think that God, Creator wise
Though threatening, will in earnest so destroy
Us his prime creatures, dignify'd so high,
Set over all his works, which in our fall,
For us created, needs with us must fail. 725

* However I with thee have fix'd my lot,

Certain to undergo like doom ; if death
Confort with thee, death is to me as life ;

So forcible within my heart I feel

The bond of nature draw me to my own, 730

My own in thee, for what thou art is mine,

Our state cannot be sever'd, we are one,

One flesh ; to lose thee were to lose myself.*

* So Adam, and thus Eve to him reply'd.

O glorious trial of exceeding love, 735
Illustrious evidence, example high
Engaging me to emulate, but short
Of thy perfection, how shall I attain,
Adam? From whose dear side I boast me sprung,
And gladly of our union hear thee speak, 740
One heart, one soul in both; whereof good proof
This day affords, declaring thee resolved,
Rather than death or ought than death more dread
Shall separate us, link'd in love so dear, 745
To undergo with me one guilt, one crime,
If any be, of tasting this fair fruit,
Whose virtue (for of good still good proceeds
Direct, or by occasion) hath presented
This happy trial of thy love, which else 750
So eminently, never had been known.
Were it I thought death menac'd would ensue
This my attempt I would sustain alone
The worst, and not persuade thee. Rather die
Deserted, than oblige thee with a fact 755
Pernicious to thy peace, chiefly assur'd
Remarkably so late of thy so true,
So faithful love unequal'd: but I feel
Far otherwise th' event, not death, but life
Augmented, open'd eyes, new hopes, new joys, 760
Taste so divine, that what of sweet before
Hath touch'd my sense, flat seems to this, and harsh.
On my experience, Adam, freely taste,
And fear of death deliver to the winds.
So saying, she embrac'd him, and for joy 765

Tenderly wept, much won that he his love
 Had so ennobled, as of choice to incur
 Divine displeasure for her sake, or death.
 In recompence (for such compliance bad
 Such recompense best merits) from the bough 770
 She gave him of that fair enticing fruit
 With liberal hand : he scrupled not to eat
 Against his better knowledge, not deceiv'd,
 But fondly overcome with female charm.
 Earth trembled from her entrails as again 775
 In pangs, and nature gave a second groan,
 Sky lour'd, and muttering thunder, some sad drops
 Wept at completing of the mortal sin
 Original;* while Adam took no thought,
 Eating his fill, nor Eve to iterate 780
 Herformer trespasses fear'd, the more to sooth
 Him with her lov'd society, that now
 As with new wine intoxicated both,
 They swim in mirth, and fancy that they feel
 Divinity within them breeding wings 785
 Wherewith to spurn the earth : but that false fruit
 Far other operation first display'd,
 Carnal desire inflaming; he on Eve
 Began to cast lascivious eyes, she him
 As wantonly repaid; in lust they burn : 790
 Till Adam thus 'gan Eve to dalliance move.

Eve, now I see thou art exact of taste,
 Much pleasure we have lost, while we abstain'd
 From this delightful fruit, nor known till now
 True relish, tasting; if such pleasure be 795
 In things to us forbidd'n, it might be wish'd,
 For this one tree had been forbidden ten,

But come, so well refresh'd now let us play
 As meet is, after such delicious fare;
 For never did thy beauty since the day 800
 I saw thee first and wedded thee, adorn'd
 With all perfections, so inflame my sense
 With ardor to enjoy thee, fairer now
 Than ever, bounty of this virtuous tree.

So said he, and forebore not glance or toy 805
 Of amorous intent, well understood
 Of Eve, whose eye darted contagious fire.
 Her hand he seiz'd, and to a shady bank,
 Thick overhead with verdant roof imbow'd,
 He led her nothing loath; flow'rs were the couch, 810
 Panies, and violets, and asphodel,
 And hyacinth, earth's freshest softest lap.
 There they their fill of love and love's disport
 Took largely, of their mutual guilt the seal,
 The solace of their sin, till dewy sleep 815
 Oppress'd them, wearied with their amorous play.

Soon as the force of that fallacious fruit,
 That with exhilarating vapour blan'd
 About their spirits had play'd, and inmost powers
 Made err, was now exhal'd; and grosser sleep 820
 Bred of unkindly fumes, with conscious dreams

Incumber'd, now had left them; up they rose
 As from unrest, and each the other viewing,
 Soon found their eyes how open'd, and their minds
 How darken'd; innocence, that as a veil 825
 Had shadow'd them from knowing ill, was gone,
 Just confidence, and native righteousness,
 And honour from about them, naked left
 To guilty shame. So rose the Danite, strong

Herculean Sampson from the harlot lap 830
 Shorn of his strength. They destitute and bare
 Of all their virtue: silent, and in face
 Confounded long they sat, as stricken mute,
 Till Adam, though not less than Eve abash'd,
 At length gave utterance to these words constrain'd. 835

O Eve, in evil hour thou didst give ear
 To that false worm, of whomsoever taught
 To counterfeit Man's voice, true in our fall,
 False in our promis'd rising; since our eyes
 Open'd we find indeed, and find we know 840
 Both good and ev'il, good lost, and evil got.
 Bad fruit of knowledge, if this be to know,
 Which leaves us naked thus, of honour void,
 Of innocence, of faith, of purity,
 Our wanted ornaments now soil'd and stain'd, 845
 And in our faces evident the signs
 Of foul concupiscence; whence evil store;
 Ev'n shame, the last of evils; of the first
 Be sure then. How shall I behold the face
 Henceforth of God or Angel, erst with joy 850
 And rapture so oft beheld; those heav'nly shapes
 Will dazzle now this earthly with their blaze
 Insufferably bright. O might I here
 In solitude live savage, in some glade
 * Obscur'd, where highest woods impenetrable 855
 To star or sun-light, spread their umbrage broad
 And brown as evening. Cover me, ye Pines,
 Ye Cedars, with innumerable boughs
 Hide me, where I may never see them more.*
 But let us now, as in bad plight, devise 860
 What best may for the present serve to hide

The parts of each from other, that seem most
 To shame obnoxious, and may cover round
 Those middle parts, that this new comer, shame,
 There sit not, and reproach us as unclean. 865

So counsell'd he, and both together went
 Into the thickest wood; there soon they chose
 The fig-tree, not that kind for fruit renown'd,
 But such as at this day to Indians known
 In Malabar or Decan spreads her arms 870

Branching so broad and long, that in the ground
 The bended twigs take root, and daughters grow
 About the mother tree, a pillar'd shade
 High overarch'd, and echoing walks between. 875

Those leaves they gather'd, and together sow'd,
 To gird their waste, vain covering if to hide
 Their guilt and dreaded shame; O how unlike
 To that first naked glory! Such of late
 Columbus found th' American, so girt 880

With feather'd cincture, naked else and wild
 Among the trees on isles and woody shores.
 Thus fenc'd, and as they thought, their shame in part
 Cover'd, but not at rest or ease of mind,
 They sat them down to weep; nor only tears 885

Rain'd at their eyes, but high winds worse within
 Began to rise, high passions, anger, hate,
 Mistrust, suspicion, discord, and shook sore
 Their inward state of mind, calm region once
 And full of peace, now tost and turbulent: 890

For understanding rul'd not, and the will
 Heard not her lore, both in subjection now
 To sensual appetite, who from beneath
 Usurping over sov'reign reason claim'd

Superior sway: from thus distemper'd breast, 895
 Adam, estrang'd in look and alter'd stile,
 Speech intermitted thus to Eve renew'd.

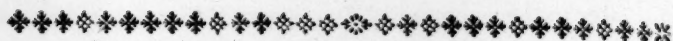
Would thou hadst hearken'd to my words, and stay'd
 * With me, as I besought thee, when that strange
 Desire of wand'ring this unhappy morn, 900
 I know not whence possess'd thee; we had then
 Remain'd still happy, not as now, despoil'd
 Of all our good, sham'd, naked, miserable.
 Let none henceforth seek needless cause to' approve
 The faith they owe; when earnestly they seek 905
 Such proof, conclude, they then begin to fail. *

To whom soon mov'd with touch of blame thus Eve.
 What words have pass'd thy lips, Adam severe!
 Imput'st thou that to my default, or will
 Of wand'ring, as thou call'st it, which who knows 910
 But might as ill have happen'd thou being by,
 Or to thyself perhaps? Hadst thou been there,
 Or here th' attempt, thou couldst not have discern'd
 Fraud in the Serpent, speaking as he spake;
 No ground of enmity between us known, 915
 Why he should mean me ill, or seek to harm?
 Was I to have never parted from thy side?
 As good have grown there still a lifeless rib.
 Being as I am, why didst not thou the head
 Command me absolutely not to go, 920
 Going into such danger as thou saidst?
 Too facil then thou didst not much gainsay,
 Nay didst permit, approve, and fair dismiss.
 Hadst thou been firm and fix'd in thy dissent,
 Neither had I transgress'd, nor thou with me. 925
 To whom then first incens'd, Adam reply'd.

Is this the love, is this the recompense
O mine to thee, ingrateful Eve, express'd
Immutable when thou wert lost, not I,
Who might have liv'd and joy'd immortal blifs : 930
Yet willingly chose rather death with thee?
And am I now upbraided as the cause
Of thy transgressing? Not enough severe,
It seems, in thy restraint: what could I more?
I warn'd thee, I admonish'd thee, foretold 935
The danger, and the lurking enemy
That lay in wait; beyond this had been force,
And force upon free will hath here no place.
But confidence then bore thee on secure,
Either to meet no danger, or to find 940
Matter of glorious trial; and perhaps
I also err'd in overmuch admiring
What seem'd in thee so perfect, that I thought
No evil durst attempt thee; but I rue
That error, which is become my crime, 945
And thou the accuser. Thus it shall befall
Him, who to worth in woman overtrusting,
Lets her will rule; restraint she will not brook,
And left to' herself, if evil thence ensue,
She first his weak indulgence will accuse. 950

Thus they in mutual accusation spent
The fruitless hours, but neither self-condemning,
And of their vain contest appear'd no end.

The end of the ninth book.



Notes on PARADISE LOST.

B O O K IX.

Ver. 5. *Venial*.—By Leave obtain'd.

Ver. 23. Though it is *not now*.

Ver. 59. *Relentless*.—Never allowing me any ease.

Ver. 92. *To imbrute*.—To mingle with a brute.

Ver. 122. *Nocent*.—Hurtful.

Ver. 125. *Vocal worship* —Express'd in words.

Ver. 116. *With act intelligential*.—With Intelligence or Understanding.

Ver. 147. *Associate*.—Comparison.

Ver. 170. *Urges*.—Causes.

Ver. 188. *Virgin Majesty*.—Blooming, beautiful as a Virgin.

Ver. 222. *Access*.—Increase.

Ver. 230. *Domestick* ?—Having a careful regard to the Good of his Family.

Ver. 256. *Beware*.—Wary. *Erect*.—On it's Guard.

Ver. 318. *Voluble*.—Rolling himself up and down.

Ver. 329. *Rapine*.—Violence.

Ver. 337. *Gratulating* —Congratulating himself.

Ver. 346. *Opportune*.—Ready for all.

Ver. 354. *Innate*.—Inhabitant.

Ver. 359. *Carbuncle*.—Fiery red, like a Carbuncle.

Ver. 361. *With tract oblique*.—Drawing himself on side-ways.

- Ver. 367. *Tortuous*.—Twisted together.
- Ver. 396. *Glozed*.—Flattered.
- Ver. 495. *Proem* —Prelude, Introduction.
- Ver. 403. *Articulate Sound*.—Sound form'd into distinct Words.
- Ver. 404. *Demur*.——Doubt of: I am not clear either Way.
- Ver. 406. *Subtlest*.—Having most Understanding.
- Ver. 447. *Importune*.—Unseasonable, troublesome.
- Ver. 450. *Spirited*.—Actuated by the Evil Spirit.
- Ver. 465. *Compact of unctuous vapour*.—Composed of an oily vapour.
- Ver. 467. *Agitation*.—Moving to and fro.
- Ver. 479. *Sole Daughter of his Voice*.——The only command which he uttered. As to the rest, all the other Trees.
- Ver. 489. Seeming to be *all impassioned*.——Fill'd with Passion, with Indignation.
- Ver. 531. *Impregned*.—Impregnated, filled.
- Ver. 542. *Elocution*.—Speech.
- Ver. 583. *And knew not* that she was in effect *eating Death*.
- Ver. 584. *Jocund*.—Joyful.
- Ver. 584. *Boon*.—Heartly, well pleased.
- Ver. 621. *Sciential*.—Giving knowledge.
- Ver. 628. *Divine of ill*.—Divining, presaging it.
- Ver. 628 *His Heart* beat uneven.
- Ver. 637. *Came prologue*.—Came beforehand.
- Ver. 638. *Bland*.—Soft, smooth.
- Ver. 659. *Dilated*.—Raised, cheered.
- Ver. 703. *In calm mood*.—In deep, settled Sadness.

Ver. 708. *Under ban to touch.*—Forbidden to touch it, under pain of God's Curse.

Ver. 728. *If Death consort with Thee.*—Attend thee; if thou must die.

Ver. 775. *Oblige thee with a fact.*—Induce thee to do it.

Ver. 780. *To iterate.*—To repeat.

Ver. 818. *Exhilarating.*—Making glad.

ibid. *Bland.*—Pleasing, flattering.

Ver. 830. *Herculean.*—Strong as *Hercules*.

Ver. 856. *Umbrage.*—Shade.

Ver. 881. *Feathered Cincture.*—Feathers girt round them.



PARADISE LOST.

BOOK X.

THE ARGUMENT.

Man's transgression known, the guardian Angels forsake paradise, and return up to Heaven to approve their vigilance, and are approv'd, God declaring that the entrance of Satan could not be by them prevented. He sends his Son to judge the transgressors, who descends and gives sentence accordingly; then in pity clothes them both, and reascends. Sin and Death sitting till then at the gates of Hell, by wondrous sympathy feeling the success of Satan in this new world, and the sin by Man there committed, resolve to sit no longer confin'd in Hell, but to follow Satan their sire up to the place of Man: To make the way easier from Hell to this world to and fro, they pave a broad high-way or bridge over Chaos, according to the track that Satan first made; then preparing for Earth, they meet him proud of his success returning to Hell; their mutual gratulation. Satan arrives at Pandemonium, in full assembly relates with boasting his success against Man; instead of applause is entertained with a general hiss by all his audience, transform'd with himself also suddenly into serpents, according to his doom given in Paradise; then deluded with a show of the forbidden tree springing up before them, they greedily reaching to take of the fruit, chew dust and bitter ashes. The proceedings of Sin and Death; God foretels the final victory of his Son over them,

and the renewing of all things; but for the present commands his Angels to make several alterations in the Heavens and elements. Adam more and more perceiving his fall'n condition, heavily bewails, rejects the condolment of Eve: she persists, and at length appeases him: then to evade the curse likely to fall on their offspring, proposes to Adam violent ways, which he approves not, but conceiving better hope, puts her in mind of the late promise made them, that her seed should be reveng'd on the Serpent, and exhorts her with him to seek peace of the offended Deity, by repentance and supplication.

MEAN while the heinous and despiteful act
 Of Satan done in Paradise, was known
 In heav'n; for what can 'scape the eye of God
 All seeing? Who in all things wise and just,
 Hinder'd not Satan to attempt the mind
 Of Man, with strength entire, and free-will arm'd,
 Complete to have discover'd and repuls'd
 Whatever wiles of foe or seeming friend.
 Up into Heav'n from Paradise in haste
 Th' angelic guards ascended, mute and sad
 For Man, for of his state by this they knew,
 Much wond'ring how the subtle Fiend had stol'n
 Entrance unseen. Soon as the unwelcome news
 From Earth arriv'd; dim sadness did not spare,
 That time celestial visages, yet mix'd
 With pity, violated not their blifs.
 About the new arriv'd, in multitudes
 Th' ethereal people ran, to hear and know
 How all befel: they tow'ards the throne supreme
 Accountable made haste to make appear

Bo
 W
 An
 Ete
 An
 A
 Fro
 No
 Wh
 For
 Wh
 On
 Just
 But
 Vice
 All j
 Easy
 Merc
 Man
 Both
 And
 So
 Tow
 Blaz'd
 Respl
 Expre
 Fath
 Mine
 Supre
 May'st
 These
 Justice

With righteous plea their utmost vigilance,
And easily approv'd; when the most high
Eternal Father from his secret cloud,
Amidst in thunder utter'd thus his voice.

Assembled Angels, and ye Pow'rs return'd 25
From unsuccessful charge, be not dismay'd,

Nor troubled at these tidings from the earth,
Which your sincerest care could not prevent,
Foretold so late, yet fall'n he is, and now
What rests, but that the mortal sentence pass 30

On his transgression, death denounc'd that day?
Justice shall not return as bounty scorn'd.

But whom send I to judge them? Whom but thee
Vicegerent Son? To thee I have transferr'd
All judgment, whether in Heav'n, or Earth, or Hell. 35

Easy it may be seen that I intend
Mercy colleague with justice, sending thee

Man's friend, his mediator, his design'd
Both ransom and redeemer voluntary,

And destin'd man himself to judge man fall'n; 40

So spake the Father, and unfolding bright
Tow'ard the right hand his glory, on the Son
Blaz'd forth unclouded deity; he full
Resplendant all his father manifest

Express'd, and thus divinely answer'd mild. 45

Father eternal, thine is to decree,
Mine both in Heav'n and Earth to do thy will
Supreme, that thou in me thy Son below'd
May'st ever rest well pleas'd, I go to judge
These thy transgressors, yet shall temper so
Justice with mercy', as may illustrate most

50

Them fully satisfy'd, and thee appease.

Attendance none shall need, nor train, where none

Are to behold the judgment, but the judg'd,

These two; the third best absent is condemn'd,

55

Convict by flight, and rebel to all law :

Conviction to the serpent none belongs.

Thus saying, from his radiant seat he rose

Of high collateral glory' : him Thrones and Powers

Princedoms, and Dominations ministrant

60

Accompanied to heaven-gate, from whence

Eden and all the coast in prospect lay.

Now was the sun in western cadence low

From noon, and gentle airs due at their hour

To fan the earth now wak'd, and usher in

65

The evening cool, when he from wrath more cool

Came the mild judge and intercessor both

To sentence Man. The voice of God they heard

Now walking in the garden, by soft winds

Brought to their ears, while day declin'd; they heard

70

And from his presence hid themselves among

The thickest trees, both man and wife, till God

Approaching, thus to Adam call'd aloud.

Where art thou Adam, wont with joy to meet

My coming seen far off? I miss thee here,

75

Where obvious duty' ere while appear'd unfought :

Or come I less conspicuous, or what change

Absents thee, or what chance detains? Come forth.

He came, and with him Eve, more loath, though first

To' offend, discount'nanc'd both, and discompos'd;

80

Love was not in their looks, either to God

Or to each other, but apparent guilt,

And shame, and perturbation, and despair,

Anger, and obstinacy', and hate and guile.

Whence Adam faulting long, thus answer'd brief.

85

I heard thee in the gard'n, and of thy voice

Afraid, being nak'd, hid myself. To whom

The gracious judge without revile reply'd.

My voice thou oft hast heard, and hast not fear'd,

But still rejoic'd ; how is it now become

90

So dreadful to thee? That thou art naked, who

Hath told to thee? Hast thou eaten of the tree,

Whereof I gave thee charge thou should'st not eat?

To whom thus Adam sore beset reply'd.

O Heav'n! in evil strait this day I stand

95

Before my judge, either to undergo

Myself the total crime, or to accuse

My other self, the partner of my life!

This Woman, whom thou mad'st to be my help,

And gav'st me as thy perfect gift, so good,

100

That from her hand I could suspect no ill,

She gave me of the tree, and I did eat.

To whom the sov'reign Prefence thus reply'd.

Was she thy God, that her thou didst obey

Before his voice, or was she made thy guide,

105

Superior, or but equal, that to her

Thou didst resign thy manhood, and the place

Wherein God set thee' above her, made of thee,

And for thee, whose perfection far excell'd

Hers in all real dignity? Adorn'd

110

She was indeed, and lovely to attract

Thy love, not thy subjection ; and her gifts

Were such as under government well seem'd,

Unseemly to bear rule, which was thy part

And person, hadst thou known thyself aright.

115

So having said, he thus to Eve in few.

Say Woman, what is this which thou hast done?

To whom sad Eve with shame nigh overwhelm'd,
 Confessing soon, yet not before her judge
 Bold or loquacious, thus abash'd reply'd. 120
 The serpent me beguil'd, and I did eat.

Which when the Lord God heard without delay
 To judgment he proceeded on th' accus'd
 Serpent though brute, unable to transfer
 The guilt on him who made him instrument 125
 Of mischief, and polluted from the end
 Of his creation; justly then accurs'd.

Because thou hast done this, thou art accurs'd
 Above all cattle, each beast of the field;
 Upon thy belly grovelling thou shalt go, 130
 And dust shall eat all the days of thy life.
 Between thee and the Woman I will put
 Enmity, and between thine and her seed:
 Her seed shall bruise thy head, thou bruise his heel.

So spake this Oracle, then verify'd 135
 When Jesus son of Mary, second Eve,
 Saw Satan fall like lightning down from Heaven,
 Prince of the air; then rising from his grave
 Spoil'd Principalities and Pow'rs, triumph'd
 In open show, and with ascension bright 140
 Captivity led captive through the air.
 Next to the woman he his sentence turn'd.

Thy sorrow I will greatly multiply
 By thy conception; children thou shalt bring
 In sorrow forth; and to thy husband's will 145
 Thine shall submit; he over thee shall rule.

On Adam last thus judgment he pronounc'd.

Because thou' hast hearken'd to the' voice of thy wife,
And eaten of the tree, concerning which
I charg'd thee, say'ing, Thou shalt not eat thereof : 150
Curs'd is the ground for thy sake : thou in sorrow
Shalt eat thereof all the days of thy life ;
Thorns also' and thistles it shall bring thee forth
Unbid ; and thou shalt eat th' herb of the field,
In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, 155
Till thou return unto the ground ; for thou
Out of the ground wast taken, know thy birth :
For dust thou art, and shalt to dust return.

So judg'd he Man, both judge and saviour sent,
And th' instant stroke of death denounc'd that day 160
Remov'd far off ; then pitying how they stood
Before him naked to the air, that now
Must suffer change, disdain'd not to begin
Thenceforth the form of servant to assume,
As when he wash'd his servants feet, so now 165
He clad their nakedness with skins of beast.*
Nor he their outward only with the skins
Of beasts, but inward nakedness, much more
Opprobrious, with his robe of righteousness,
Arraying cover'd from his father's sight. 170
To him with swift ascent he up return'd,
Into his blisful bosom reassum'd
In glory as of old ; to him appeas'd
All, though all-knowing, what had pass'd with man
Recounted, mixing intercession sweet. 175

Mean while ere this was sinn'd and judg'd on Earth,
Within the gates of Hell sat Sin and Death,
In counterview within the gates that now
Stood open wide, belching outrageous flame

Far into Chaos, since the Fiend pass'd through, 180
Sin opening, who thus now to Death began

O Son, why sit we here each other viewing
Idly, while Satan our great author thrives
In other worlds, and happier seats provides
For us his offspring dear ? It cannot be 185

But that success attends him ; if mishap,
Ere this he had return'd, with fury driven.
Methinks I feel new strength within me rise,
Wings growing, and dominion giv'n me large
Beyond this deep ; whatever draws me on, 190

Or sympathy, or some cannatural force
Pow'rful at greatest distance to unite
With secret amity things of like kind
By secretest conveyance. Thou my shade
Inseparable must with me along ; 195

For Death from sin no pow'r can separate.
But lest the difficulty of passing back
Stay his return perhaps over this gulf
Impassable, impervious, let us try
Adventrous work, yet to thy pow'r and mine 200
Not unagreeable, to found a path

Over this main from Hell to that new world
Where Satan now prevails, a monument
Of merit high to all th' infernal host.

Whom thus the meager Shadow answer'd soon. 205
Go whither fate and inclination strong
Leads thee ; I shall not lag behind, nor err
The way, thou leading, such a scent I draw
Of carnage, prey innumerable, and taste
The savour of Death from all things there that live : 210
Nor shall I to the work thou enterprisest

Book X. PARADISE LOST.

263

Be wanting, but afford thee equal aid.

* So saying, with delight he snuff'd the smell
Of mortal change on earth. As when a flock

Of ravenous fowl, tho' many a league remote,

215

Against the day of battle, to a field,

Where armies lie encamp'd, come flying, lur'd

With scent of living carcases design'd

For death the following day, in bloody fight :

So scented the grim Feature, and upturn'd

220

His nostril wide into the murky air,

Sagacious of his quarry from so far

Then both from our Hell gates into the waste

Wide anarchy of Chaos damp and dark

Flew diverse, and with pow'r (their pow'r was great)

225

Hovering upon the waters, what they met

Solid or slimy, as in raging sea

Toft up and down, together crowded drove

From each side sholing. The aggregated foil

Death with his mace petrific, smote and fixt :

230

And with Asphaltic slime, (broad as the gate,

Deep to the roots of Hell) the gather'd beach

They fasten'd, and the mole immense wrought on

Over the foaming deep high arch'd, a bridge

Of length prodigious, joining to the wall

235

Immoveable of this new fenceless world

Forfeit to Death; from hence a passage broad,

Smooth, easy, inoffensive down to Hell.*

Now had they brought the work by wondrous art

Over the vex'd abyfs, following the track

240

Of Satan to the self same place where he

First lighted from his wing, and landed safe

From out of Chaos, to the outside bare

Of this round world : with pins of adamant
And chains they made all fast, too fast they made
And durable. And now in little space
The confines met of empyrean Heaven
And of this world, and on the left hand Hell
With long reach interpos'd ; three several ways.
In sight, to each of these three places led.
And now their way to earth they had descri'd,
To Paradise first tending, when behold
Satan in likeness of an Angel bright.
Disguis'd he came, but those his children dear
Their parent soon discern'd, though in disguise.
He after Eve seduc'd, unminded slunk
Into the wood fast by, and changing shape
To' observe the sequel, saw his guileful act
By Eve, though all unweeting, seconded
Upon her husband, saw their shame that fought
Vain covertures ; but when he saw descend
The Son of God to judge them, terrify'd
He fled, not hoping to escape, but shun
The present, fearing guilty what his wrath
Might suddenly inflict ; that past, return'd
By night, and list'ning where the hapless pair
Sat in their sad discourse, and various plaint,
Thence gather'd his own doom, which understood
Not instant, but of future time, with joy
And tidings fraught, to Hell he now return'd ;
And at the brink of Chaos, near the foot
Of this new wonderous pontifice, unhop'd,
Met who to meet him came, his offspring dear.
Great joy was at their meeting, and at sight
Of that stupendous bridge his joy increas'd.

245

250

255

260

265

270

275

Long he admiring stood, till Sin, his fair
 Enchanting daughter, thus the silence broke.

O Parent, these are thy magnificent deeds, 280

Thy trophies, which thou view'st as not thy own ;
 Thou art their author, and prime architect ;

For I no sooner in my heart divin'd,
 My heart, which by a secret harmony
 Still moves with thine, join'd in connection sweet, 285

That thou on earth hadst prosper'd, but I felt
 Though distant from thee worlds between, yet felt
 That I must after thee with this thy son,

Such fatal consequence unites us three :
 Hell could no longer hold us in her bounds,
 Nor this unvoyagable gulf obscure 290

Detain from following thy illustrious track.

Thou hast achiev'd our liberty, confin'd
 Within Hell gates till now, thou us impower'd
 To fortify thus far, and overlay,

With this portentous bridge the dark abyss, 295

Thine now is all this world ; thy virtue' hath won
 What thy hands builded not, thy wisdom gain'd

With odds what war hath lost, and fully aveng'd
 Our soil in Heav'n ; here thou shalt monarch reign,
 There didst not ; there let him still victor sway 300

As battle hath adjudg'd, from this new world
 Retiring, by his own doom alienated,

And henceforth monarchy with thee divide
 Of all things parted by th' empyreal bounds,
 His quadrature, from thy orbicular world.

Whom thus the Prince of darkness answer'd glad. 305
 Fair daughter, and thou Son and Grandchild both,

High proof ye now have giv'n to be the race
 Of Satan, (for I glory in the name,
 Antagonist of heav'n's almighty king)
 Amply have merited of me, of all
 Th' infernal empire, that so near Heav'n's door
 Triumphal with triumphal act have met
 Mine with this glorious work. Therefore while I
 Descend through darkness, on your road with ease,
 To my associate Pow'rs, them to acquaint
 With these successes; and with them rejoice,
 You two this way, to Paradise descend;
 There dwell and reign in bliss, thence on the earth
 Dominion exercise and in the air,
 Chiefly on man, so lord of all declar'd,
 Him first make sure your thrall, and lastly kill.
 My substitutes I send you, and create
 Plenipotent on earth, of matchless might
 Issuing from me: on your joint vigour now,
 My hold of this new kingdom all depends,
 Through Sin to Death expos'd by my exploit.
 So saying he dismiss'd them; they with speed
 Their course through thickest constellations held,
 Spreading their bane. Mean time Satan went down
 The causway to hell gate; on either side
 Disparted Chaos over built exclaim'd,
 And with rebounding surge the bars assail'd,
 That scorn'd his indignation: through the gate,
 Wide open and unguarded, Satan pass'd,
 And all about found desolate; for those
 Appointed to sit there, had left their charge.
 The rest were all retir'd, about the walls
 Of Pandemonium, city and proud seat

310

315

320

325

330

335

Of Lucifer, so by allusion call'd,

Of that bright star to Satan paragon'd.

340

There kept their watch the legions, while the Grand

In council sat, solicitous what chance

Might intercept their emp'rour sent; so he

Departing gave command. He through the midst

In slow plebeian Angel militant

345

Of lowest order, pass'd; and from the door

Of that Plutonian hall, invisible

Ascended his high throne, which under state

Of richest texture spread, at the upper end

Was plac'd in regal lustre. Down a while

350

He sat, and round about him saw unseen:

At last as from a cloud his fulgent head

And shape star-bright appear'd, or brighter, clad

With what permissive glory since his fall

Was left him, or false glitter: All amaz'd

355

At that so sudden blaze the Stygian throng

Bent their aspect, and whom they wish'd beheld,

Their mighty chief return'd: loud was th' acclaim:

Forth rush'd in haste the great consulting peers,

Rais'd from their dark Divan, and with like joy

360

Congratulant approach'd him, who with hand

Silence, and with these words attention won.

Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers,

For in possession such, not only of right,

I call you and declare you now, return'd

365

Successful beyond hope, to lead you forth

Triumphant out of this infernal pit

The dungeon of our tyrant: now possess,

As Lords, a spacious world, to' our native Heaven

Little inferior, by my adventure hard 370
 With peril great atchiev'd. Long were to tell
 What I have done, what suffer'd, with what pain
 Voyag'd th' unreal, vast, unbounded deep
 Of horrible confusion, over which
 By Sin and Death a broad way now is pav'd 375
 To expedite your glorious march: but I
 Toil'd out my uncouth passage, forc'd to ride
 Th' untractable abyfs, plung'd in the womb
 Of unoriginal Night; thence how I found
 The new created world, which fame in Heaven 380
 Long had foretold, a fabric wonderful
 Of absolute perfection, therein Man
 Plac'd in a Paradise, by our exile
 Made happy: Him by fraud I have seduc'd
 From his Creator, and the more to' increase 385
 Your wonder, with an apple; he thereat
 Offended, hath giv'n up Man and his world,
 To Sin and Death a prey, and so to us,
 To range in, and to dwell, and over Man
 To rule, as over all he should have rul'd. 390
 True is, me also he hath judg'd, or rather
 Me not, but the brute serpent in whose shape
 Man I deceiv'd: that which to me belongs,
 Is enmity, which he will put between
 Me and mankind; I am to bruise his heel, 395
 His seed, (when, is not set,) shall bruise my head;
 A world who would not purchase with a bruise,
 Or much more grievous pain? Ye have the account
 Of my performance: What remains, ye Gods,
 But up and enter now into full bliss?
 So having said, a while he stood, expecting 400

Their universal shout and high applause
 To fill his ear, when contrary he hears
 On all sides, from innumerable tongues
 A dismal universal hiss, the sound
 Of public scorn : he wonder'd, but not long 405
 Had leisure, wond'ring at himself now more ;
 His visage drawn he felt too sharp and spare,
 His arms clung to his ribs, his legs intertwining
 Each other, till supplanted down he fell
 A monstrous serpent on his belly prone, 410
 Reluctant, but in vain, a greater power
 Now rul'd him, punish'd in the shape he sinn'd
 According to his doom : he would have spoke,
 But hiss for hiss return'd with forked tongue
 To forked tongue, for now were all transform'd 415
 Alike, to serpents all as accessories
 To his bold riot : dreadful was the din
 Of hissing through the hall ; thick swarming all
 Him follow'd issuing forth to th' open field,
 Where all yet left of that revolted rout 420
 Heav'n-fallen, in station stood or just array,
 Sublime with expectation when to see
 In triumph issuing forth their glorious chief ;
 They saw, but other sight instead ! a croud
 Of ugly serpents. Horror on them fell, 425
 And horrid sympathy ; for what they saw,
 They felt themselves now changing ; down their arms,
 Down fell both spear and shield, down they as fast,
 And the dire hiss renew'd, and the dire form
 Catch'd by contagion, like in punishment, 430
 As in their crime. Thus was th' applause they meant,

Turn'd to exploding hiss, triumph to shame.

Mean while in Paradise the hellish pair
Too soon arrived, Sin and behind her Death
Close following pace for pace, not mounted yet 435
On his pale horse : to whom Sin thus began

Second of Satan sprung, all conqu'ring Death,
What think'st thou of our empire now, though earn'd
With travel difficult, not better far
Than still at Hell's dark threshold to' have sat watch, 440
Unnam'd, undreaded, and thyself hast starv'd ?

Whom thus the Sin-born monster answer'd soon.
To me, who with eternal famine pine,
Alike is Hell, or Paradise, or Heaven,
There best, where most with ravin I may meet. 445

To whom th' incestuous mother thus reply'd.
Thou therefore on these herbs, and fruits, and flowers
Feed first, on each beast next, and fish, and fowl.
No homely morsels; and whatever thing
The sithe of time mowes down, devour unspar'd; 450
Till I in Man residing through the race,
His thoughts, his looks, words, actions all infect,
And season him thy last and sweetest prey.

This said, they both betook them several ways,
Both to destroy, or unimmortal make 455
All kinds, and for destruction to mature
Sooner or later; which th' Almighty seeing,
From his transcendent seat the saints among,
To those bright orders utter'd thus his voice.

See with what heat these dogs of Hell advance 460
To waste and havoc yonder world, which I
So fair and good created, and had still
Kept in that state, had not the folly of Man

Let in these wasteful furies, who impute
 Folly to me, so doth the prince of Hell 465
 And his adherents, that with so much ease
 I suffer them to enter and possess
 A place so heav'nly, and conniving seem
 To gratify my scornful enemies,
 And know not that at one victorious sling
 Of thy Almighty arm, well-pleasing Son, 470
 Both Sin and Death, and yawning Grave at last
 Through Chaos hurl'd, shall stop the mouth of Hell
 For ever, and seal up his ravenous jaws.
 Then Heav'n and Earth renew'd shall be made pure
 To Sanctify that shall receive no stain : 475
 Till then the curse pronounc'd on both proceeds.

He ended, and the heav'nly audience loud
 Sung Hallelujah, as the sound of seas,
 Through multitude that sung : Just are thy ways,
 Righteous are thy decrees on all thy works ; 480
 Who can extenuate thee ? Next, to the Son,
 Destin'd restorer of mankind, by whom
 New Heav'n and Earth shall to the ages rise,
 Or down from heaven descend Such was their song,
 While the Creator calling forth by name 485
 His mighty Angels gave them several charge,
 As sort'd best with present things. The sun
 Had first his precept so to move, so shine,
 As might affect the earth with cold and heat
 Scarce tolerable, and from the north to call 490
 Decrepit winter, from the south to bring
 Solstitial summer's heat. To the blanc moon
 Her office they prescrib'd, to th' other five
 Their planetary motions ; and the fix'd

Their influence malignant when to shower,
 Which of them rising with the sun, or falling,
 Should prove tempestuous: To the winds they set
 Their corners, when with bluster to confound
 Sea, air, and shore, the thunder when to roll
 With terror, through the dark aerial hall.
 Some say he bade his Angels turn ascanfe
 The poles of earth twice ten degrees and more
 From the sun's axle; they with labour push'd
 Oblique the centric globe, to bring in change
 Of seasons to each clime; else had the spring
 Perpetual smil'd on earth with vernant flowers,
 Equal in days and nights, except to those
 Beyond the polar circles; to them day
 Had unbenighted shone, while the low sun
 To recompence his distance, in their sight
 Had rounded still th' horizon, and not known
 Or East or West, which had forbid the snow
 From cold Estotiland, and south as far.
 These changes in the heav'ns, though slow, produc'd
 Like change on sea and land, fideral blast,
 Vapor, and mist, and exhalation hot,
 Corrupt and pestilent. Now from the north
 Burling their brazen dungeon, arm'd with ice
 And snow and hail and stormy gust and flaw,
 Boreas and Cæcias and Argestes loud
 And Thrascias rend the woods and seas upturn.
 With adverse blast upturn them from the south
 Notus and Afer: thwart of these forth rush
 Eurus and Zephyr with their lateral noise,
 irocco, and Libecchio. Thus began
 Outrage from lifeless things: but Discord first

495

500

505

510

515

520

525

Daughter of Sin, among th' irrational,
Death introduc'd through fierce antipathy.
Beast now with beast 'gan war, and fowl with fowl,
And fish with fish; to graze the herb all leaving, 530
Devour'd each other; nor stood much in awe
Of Man, but fled him, or with count'nance grim
Glar'd on him passing. These were from without
The growing miseries, which Adam saw
Already' in part, though hid in gloomiest shade 535
To sorrow abandon'd, but worse felt within,
And in a troubled sea of passion tost,
Thus to disburden sought with sad complaint.
* O miserable of happy! Is this the end
Of this new glorious world, and me so late 540
The glory of that glory, who now become
Accurs'd of blessed! Hide me from the face
Of God, whom to behold was then my height
Of happiness? Yet well, if here would end
The misery; I deserv'd it, and would bear 545
My own deservings; but this will not serve;
All that I eat or drink, or shall beget,
Is propagated curse. O voice once heard
Delightfully, *Increase and multiply*,
Now death to hear! For what can I increase 550
Or multiply, but curses on my head?
Who of all ages to succeed, but feeling
The evil on him brought by me, will curse
My head? Ill fare our ancestor impure,
For this we may thank Adam; so besides 555
Mine own that bide upon me, all from me
Shall with a fierce reflux on me redound,

On me as on their centre'. O fleeting joys
Of Paradise, dear bought with lasting woes !
Did I request thee, Maker, from my clay * 560
To mould me Man ? Did I solicit thee
From darkness to promote me, or here place
In this delicious garden ? As my will
Concurr'd not to my be'ing, it were but right
And equal to reduce me to my dust, 565
Desirous to resign and render back
All I receiv'd, unable to perform
Thy terms too hard, by which I was to hold
The good I fought not. To the loss of that,
Sufficient penalty, why hast thou added 570
The sense of endless woes ? Inexplicable
Thy justice seems. Yet to say truth, too late
I thus contest ; then should have been refus'd
Those terms whatever, when they were propos'd :
Thou did'st accept them ; wilt thou' enjoy the good, 575
Then cavil the conditions ? And though God
Made thee without thy leave, what if thy Son
Prove disobedient, and reprov'd, retort,
Wherefore didst thou beget me ; I fought it not :
Would thou admit for this contempt of thee 580
That proud excuse ? Yet him not thy election,
But natural necessity begot.
God made thee' of choice his own, and of his own
To serve him ; thy reward was of his grace,
Thy punishment then justly' is at his will. 585
* Be' it so, for I submit ; his doom is fair,
That dust I am, and shall to dust return.
O welcome hour whenever ! Why delays.
His hand to execute what his decree

Fix'd on this day? Why do I overlive,

590

Why am I mock'd with death, and lengthen'd out

To deathless pain? How gladly would I meet

Mortality my sentence, and be earth

Inferible, how glad would lay me down

As in my mother's lap? There I should rest

595

And sleep secure; his dreadful voice no more

Would thunder in my ears, no fear of worse

To me and to my offspring would torment me

With cruel expectation. Yet one doubt

Pursues me still, lest all I cannot die,

600

Lest that pure breath of life, the spi'rit of Man

Which God inspir'd, cannot together perish

With this corporeal clod. Then in the grave,

Or in some other dismal place, who knows

But I shall die a living death? 'Tis so,

605

That death is not one stroke, as I suppos'd,

Bereaving sense, but endless misery.

From this day onward, which I feel begun

Both in me, and without me, and to last

To perpetuity. Ay me, that fear

610

Comes thund'ring back with dreadful revolution

On my defenceless head; both Death and I

Am found eternal, and incorporate both.

Nor I on my part'single, in me all

Posterity stands curs'd: Fair patrimony

615

That I must leave you, Sons; O were I able

To waste it all myself, and leave you none!*

So disinherited how would ye bless

Me now your curse! Ah, why should all mankind

For one man's fault thus guiltless be condemn'd?

620

If guiltless. But from me what can proceed,

But all corrupt, both mind and will deprav'd,
Not to do only, but to will the same
With me? How can they then acquitted stand
In sight of God? Him after all disputes 615
Forc'd I absolve: all my evasions vain,
And reasonings, though through mazes, lead me still
But to my own conviction: first and last
On me, me only, as the source and spring
Of all corruption, all the blame lights due. 630
So might the wrath. Fond wish! Couldst thou support
That burden heavier than the earth to bear,
Than all the world much heavier, though divided
With that bad Woman? Thus what thou desir'st
And what thou fear'st alike destroys all hope 635
Of refuge, and concludes thee miserable;
To Satan only like both crime and doom.
O Conscience, into what abyſs of fears
And horrors hast thou driv'n me; out of which
I find no way, from deep to deeper plung'd! 640
Thus Adam to himself lamented loud
* Through the still night, not now, as ere Man fell,
Wholesome and cool, and mild, but with black air
Accompanied, with damps and dreadful gloom,
Which to his evil conscience represented 645
All things with double terror: on the ground
Outstretch'd he lay, on the cold ground, and oft
Curs'd his creation, death as oft accus'd
Of tardy execution, since denounc'd
The day of his offence. Why comes not death,
Said he, with one thrice acceptable stroke 650
To end me? Shall truth fail to keep her word,
Justice divine not hasten to be just?

But death comes not at call, justice divine
Mends not her slowest pace for prayers or cries.
O woods, O fountains, hillocks, dales and bowers,
With other echo late I taught your shades
To answer and resound far other song.*

655

Whom thus afflicted when sad Eve beheld,
Desolate where she sat, approaching nigh,
Soft words to his fierce passion she assay'd;
But her with stern regard he thus repel'd.

660

Out of my sight, thou Serpent; that name best
Befits thee with him leagu'd, thyself as false
And hateful: nothing wants, but that thy shape,
Like his, and colour serpentine may shew
Thy inward fraud, to warn all creatures from thee
Henceforth; lest that too heav'nly form, protended
To hellish falsehood, snare them. But for thee

665

I had persisted happy, had not thy pride
Rejected my forewarning, and disdain'd
Not to be trusted, longing to be seen

670

Though by the Dev'l himself, him overweening
To over-reach, but with the serpent meeting
Fool'd and beguil'd, by him thou, I by thee,

675

To trust thee from my side, imagin'd wise,
Constant, mature, proof against all assaults,
And understood not all was but a show
Rather than solid virtue'. * O why did God,
Creator wise, that peopled highest heaven

680

With spirits masculine, create at last
This novelty on earth; this fair defect
Of nature, and not fill the world at once
With Men as Angels without feminine

Or find some other way to generate
Mankind? This mischief had not then befall'n,
And more that shall befall, innumerable
Disturbances on earth through female snares,
And strait conjunction with this sex. For either
He never shall find out fit mate, but such
As some misfortune brings him, or mistake;
Or whom he wishes most shall seldom gain
Through her perverseness, but shall see her gain'd
By a far worse, or if she love, withheld
By parents; or his happiest choice too late
Shall meet, already link'd and wedlock-bound
To a fell adversary, his hate or shame.*

He added not, and from her turn'd; but Eve
Not so repuls'd, with tears that ceas'd not flowing,
And tresses all disorder'd, at his feet
Fell humble, and embracing them, besought
His peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint.

* Forfake me not thus, Adam, witness Heaven
What love sincere, and reverence in my heart
I bear thee, and unweeting have offended,
Unhappily deceiv'd; thy suppliant
I beg, and clasp thy knees; bereave me not,
Whereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,
Thy counsel in this uttermost distress,
My only strength and stay: forlorn of thee,
Whither shall I betake me, where subsist?
While yet we live, scarce one short hour perhaps,
Between us two let there be peace, both joining,
As join'd in injuries, one enmity
Against a foe by doom express assign'd us,
That cruel Serpent: On me exercise not

Thy hatred for this misery befall'n,
On me already lost, me than thyself
More miserable ; both have sinn'd, but thou
Against God only', I against God and thee,
And to the place of judgment will return,
There with my cries importune Heav'n, that all
The sentence from thy head remov'd may light
On me, sole cause to thee of all this woe,
Me, only me, just object of his ire.

720

725

* She ended weeping, and her lowly plight,
Immoveable till peace obtain'd from fault
Acknowledg'd and deplor'd, in Adam wrought
Commiseration ; soon his heart relented
Tow'ards her, his life so late and sole delight,
Now at his feet submissive in distress,
Creature so fair his reconciliation seeking,
His counsel, whom she had displeas'd, his aid.
At once disarm'd, his anger all he lost,
And thus with peaceful words uprais'd her soon.

730

735

Unwary', and too desirous, as before,
So now, of what thou know'st not, who desir'st
The punishment all on thyself ; alas,
Bear thine own first, ill able to sustain
His full wrath, whose thou feel'st as yet least part,
And my displeasure bear'st so ill. * If prayers
Could alter high decrees, I to that place
Would speed before thee, and be louder heard
That on my head all might be visited,
Thy frailty and infirmer sex forgiven,
To me committed and by me expos'd.
But rise, let us no more contend, nor blame

740

745

Each other, blam'd enough elsewhere, but strive
 In offices of love, how we may lighten 750
 Each other's burden, in our share of woe;
 Since this day's death denounc'd, if ought I see,
 Will prove no sudden, but a slow pac'd evil,
 A long day's dying to augment our pain,
 And to our seed (O hapless seed!) deriv'd.* 755
 To whom thus Eve, recovering heart, reply'd.
 Adam, by sad experiment I know
 How little weight my words with thee can find,
 Found so erroneous, thence by just event
 Found so unfortunate; nevertheless, 760
 Restor'd by thee, vile as I am, to place
 Of new acceptance, hopeful to regain
 Thy love, the sole contentment of my heart
 Living or dying, from thee I will not hide
 What thoughts in my unquiet breast are risen. 765
 If care of our descent perplex us most,
 Which must be born to certain woe, devour'd
 By Death at last; and miserable it is
 To be to others cause of misery,
 Our own begott'en, and of our loins to bring 770
 Into this cursed world a woeful race,
 That after wretched life must be at last
 Food for so foul a monster; in thy power
 It lies, yet ere conception to prevent
 The race unblest, to be'ing yet unbegot. 775
 Childless thou art, childless remain: so Death
 Shall be deceiv'd his glue, and with us two
 Be forc'd to satisfy his ravenous maw.
 But if thou judge it hard and difficult,
 Converseing, looking, loving, to abstain 780

From love's due rites, nuptial embraces sweet,
And with desire to languish without hope,
Before the present object languishing
With like desire, which would be misery
And torment less than none of what we dread; 785
Then both ourselves and seed at once to free
From what we fear for both, let us make short,
Let us seek Death, or he not found, supply
With our own hands his office on ourselves :
Why stand we longer shivering under fears, 790
That shew no end but death, and have the power,
Of many ways to die the shortest choosing,
Destruction with destruction to destroy ?

She ended here, or vehement despair
Broke off the rest ; so much of death her thoughts 795
Had entertain'd, as dy'd her cheeks with pale.
But Adam with such counsel nothing sway'd,
To better hopes his more attentive mind
Lab'ring had rais'd, and thus to Eve reply'd.

* Eve, thy contempt of life and pleasure seems 800
To argue in thee something more sublime
And excellent than what thy mind contemns ;
But self-destruction therefore sought, refutes
That excellent thought in thee, and implies,
Not thy contempt, but anguish and regret 805
For loss of life and pleasure overlov'd.
Or if thou covet death, as utmost end
Of misery, so thinking to evade
The penalty pronounc'd, doubt not but God
Hath wiselier arm'd his vengeful ire than so 810
To be forestall'd ; much more I fear lest death

So snatch'd will not exempt us from the pain
 We are by doom to pay; rather such acts
 Of contumacy will provoke the Highest
 To make death in us live.* Then let us seek 815
 Some safer resolution, which methinks
 I have in view, calling to mind with heed
 Part of our sentence, that thy seed shall bruise
 The Serpent's head; piteous amends, unless
 Be meant, whom I conjecture, our grand foe 820
 Satan, who in the Serpent hath contriv'd
 Against us this deceit. To crush his head
 Would be revenge indeed; which will be lost
 By death brought on ourselves, or childless days
 Resolv'd as thou proposest; so our foe 825
 Shall 'scape his punishment ordain'd, and we
 Instead shall double ours upon our heads.
 No more be mention'd then of violence
 Against ourselves, or wilful barrenness,
 That cuts us off from hope, and favours only 830
 Reluctance against God and his just yoke
 Laid on our necks. Remember with what mild
 And gracious temper he both heard and judg'd
 Without wrath or reviling; we expected
 Immediate dissolution, which we thought 835
 Was meant by death that day, when lo, to thee
 Pains only in child-bearing were foretold,
 And bringing forth, soon recompens'd with joy,
 Fruit of thy womb: on me the curse aslope
 Glanc'd on the ground; with labour I must earn 840
 My bread; what harm? Idleness had been worse;
 My labour will sustain me; and lest cold
 Or heat should injure us, his timely care

Hath unbefought provided, and his hands

Cloth'd us unworthy, pitying while he judg'd ;

845

*How much more, if we pray him, will his ear

Be open, and his heart to pity' incline,

And teach us further by what means to shun

Th' inclement seasons, rain, ice, hail and snow ?

Which now the sky with various face begins

850

To shew us in this mountain, while the winds

Blow moist and keen, shattering the graceful locks

Of these fair spreading trees ; which bids us seek

Some better shroud, some better warmth to cherish

Our limbs benumb'd, ere this diurnal star

855

Leave cold the night, * how we his gather'd beams

Reflected, may with matter sore foment,

Or by collision of two bodies grind

The air attrite to fire, as late the clouds

Justling or push'd with winds rude in their shock

860

Tine the slant lightning, whose thwart flame driv'n down

Kindles the gummy bark of fir or pine,

And sends a comfortable heat from far,

Which might supply the sun. Such fire to use,

And what may else be remedy or cure

To evils which our own misdeeds have wrought,

865

He will instruct us praying, and of grace

Beseeching him, so as we need not fear

To pass commodiously this life sustain'd

By him with many comforts, till we end

In dust, our final rest and native home.

870

What better can we do, than to the place

Repairing where he judg'd us, prostrate fall

Before him reverent, and there confess .

Humbly our faults, and pardon beg, with tears,

Watering the ground, and with our sighs the air
 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign
 Of sorrow' unfeign'd, and humiliation meek?
 Undoubtedly he will relent and turn

875

From his displeasure: in whose look serene,
 When angry most he seem'd and most severe,
 What else but favour, grace, and mercy shone?

880

So spake our father penitent, nor Eve
 Felt less remorse: they forwith to the place
 Repairing where he judg'd them, prostrate fell
 Before him reverent, and both confess'd
 Humbly their faults and pardon begg'd, with tears
 Watering the ground, and with their sighs the air
 Frequenting, sent from hearts contrite, in sign
 Of sorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.

885





Notes on PARADISE LOST.

B O O K X.

- Ver. 37. *Colleague with Justice*.—Companion of it.
 Ver. 59. *Collateral*.—Co-ordinate, co-equal.
 Ver. 63. *In western Cadence low*.—Fallen in the West.
 Ver. 120. *Loquacious*.—Talkative.
 Ver. 178. *In counterview*.—Over against each other.
 Ver. 199. *Impervious*.—Having no Path through it.
 Ver. 221. *Murky*.—Dark.
 Ver. 222. *Sagacious of*.—Smelling. *His quarry*.—His Prey.
 Ver. 229. *Sholing*.—In shoals, large quantities.
 Ver. 230. *Aggregated*.—Thrust together.
 Ver. 231. *Petrific*.—Turning into stone.
 Ver. 233. *A Mole is a Wall carried out into the Sea*.
 Ver. 244. *Pontifice*.—Bridge.
 Ver. 261. *All unweeting*.—Quite unexpectedly: Or intending nothing less than what followed.
 Ver. 340. *Paragon'd*.—Compared.
 Ver. 345. *Plebeian*.—Of the vulgar rank.
 Ver. 447. *Plutonian*.—Devilish. The Heathen Poets supposed *Pluto* to be the King of Hell.
 Ver. 352. *Fulgent*.—Shining bright.

Ver. 376. *To expedite*.—To forward, hasten.

Ver. 379. *Unoriginal*.—Uncreated, eternal.

Ver. 487. *Sorted*.—Agreed.

Ver. 481. *Extenuate*.—Lessen.

Ver. 492. *Solstitial heat*.—Such as is at the height of summer.

Ver. 505. *Centric*.—Moving round it's Center.

Ver. 513. *Estotiland*.—A part of *America*, near the *Arctic Circle*.

Ver. 515. *Sideral*.—From the Stars.

Ver. 520. *Boreas*.—The Northwind, *Cæcias*. the N. W. *Argestes*, the N. E. *Thrafcias*, N. E. and by East.

Ver. 523. *Notus*.—The South West, *Afer* or *Africus* the S. West: *Eurus* the East Wind; *Zephyr*, the West, *Lustral*.—Sideways.—*Siroocco*, the S. E. *Libecchio* the South West. So the *Italians* call them.

Ver. 612. *Incorporate*.—Join'd in one.

Ver. 652. *Tardy*.—Slow.

Ver. 661. *She assay'd*.—Tried the effect of.

Ver. 668. *Protended*.—Held or spread before, made a Cover for.

Ver. 705. *Forlorn*.—Forsaken.

Ver. 814. *Contumacy*.—Obstinacy.

Ver. 855. *This Diurnal Star*.—The Sun; many suppose all the fixt Stars are Suns.

Ver. 857. *Sere*.—Dry. *Collision*.—Rubbing together.

Ver. 859. *Attrite*.—Rubbed between them.

Ver. 861. *Tine*.—Sharpen or kindle.

P A R A D I S E L O S T.

B O O K XI.

T H E A R G U M E N T.

The Son of God presents to his Father the prayers of our first parents now repenting, and intercedes for them; God accepts them, but declares that they must no longer abide in Paradise; sends Michael with a band of Cherubim to dispossess them; but first to reveal to Adam future things: Michael's coming down. Adam shews to Eve certain ominous signs; he discerns Michael's approach, goes out to meet him: the Angel denounces their departure. Eve's Lamentation. Adam pleads, but submits: the Angel leads him up to a high hill, sets before him in vision what shall happen till the flood.

THUS they in lowliest plight repentant stood
 Praying, for from the mercy-seat above
 Prevenient grace descending had remov'd
 The stony from their hearts, and made new flesh
 Regenerate grow instead, that sighs new breath'd
 Unutterable, which the Spi'rit of prayer
 Inspir'd and wing'd for Heav'n with speedier flight
 Than loudest oratory: to Heav'n their prayers
 Flew up, nor miss'd the way, and in they pass'd
 Dimensionless through heav'nly doors; then clad
 With incense, where the golden altar fum'd,
 By their great intercessor, came in sight
 Before the Father's throne; them the glad Son

5

10

Presenting, thus to intercede began.

See, Father, what first fruits on earth are sprung 15
From thy implanted grace in Man, these sighs
And pray'rs, which in this golden censer, mix'd
With incense, I thy priest before thee bring,
Fruits of more pleasing favour from thy seed
Sown with contrition in his heart, than those 20
Which his own hand manuring all the trees
Of Paradise could have produc'd, ere fall'n
From innocence. Now therefore bend thine ear
To supplication; hear his sighs though mute;
Unskilful with what words to pray, let me 25
Interpret for him, me his advocate
And propitiation; all his works on me
Good or not good ingraft, my merit those
Shall perfect, and for these my death shall pay.
Accept me, and in me from these receive 30
The smell of peace tow'ard mankind; let him live
Before thee reconcil'd, at least his days
Number'd, though sad, till death his doom, (which I
To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse)
To better life shall yield him, where with me 35
All my redeem'd may dwell in joy and bliss,
Made one with me as I with thee am one.

To whom the Father, without cloud, serene.
All thy request for Man, accepted Son,
Obtain; but in that Paradise to dwell, 40
The law I gave to nature him forbids:
Those pure immortal elements that know
No gross, no unharmonious mixture foul,
Eject him tainted, gross to air as gross,
And mortal food, as may dispose him best 45

For dissolution wrought by sin, that first
Distemper'd all things, and of incorrupt
Corrupted. I at first with two fair gifts
Created him endow'd, with happiness
And immortality : that fondly lost, 50
This other serv'd but to eternize woe ;
Till I provided death ; so death becomes
His final remedy, and after life
Try'd in sharp tribulation, and refin'd
By faith and faithful works, to second life, 55
Resigns him up with Heav'n and Earth renew'd.
But let us call to synod all the Blest
Through Heav'n's wide bounds ; from them I will not hide
My judgments, how with mankind I proceed,
As how with peccant Angels late they saw, 60
And in their state, though firm, stood more confirm'd.

He ended, and the Son gave signal high
To the bright minister that watch'd ; he blew
His trumpet, heard in Oreb since perhaps
When God descended, and perhaps once more 65
To sound a general doom. Th' angelic blast
Fill'd all the regions : from their blissful bowers
Of amaranthine shade, fountain or spring,
By the waters of life, where'er they sat
In fellowships of joy, the sons of light 70
Hasted, resorting to the summons high,
And took their seats ; till from his throne supreme
Th' Almighty thus pronounc'd his sov'reign will.
O Sons, like one of us man is become
To know both good and evil ; but let him boast 75
His knowledge of good lost, and evil got ;

Happier, had it suffic'd him to have known
Good by itself, and evil not at all.

He sorrows now, repents, and prays contrite,
My motions in him; longer than they move,

80

His heart I know, how variable and vain
Self-left. Lest therefore his now bolder hand
Reach also of the tree of life, and eat,

And live for ever, dream at least to live

For ever, to remove him I decree,

85

And send him from the garden forth to till

The ground whence he was taken, fitter soil.

Michael, this my behest have thou in charge,

Take to thee from among the Cherubim

Thy choice of flaming warriors, lest the Fiend,

90

Or in behalf of Man, or to invade

Vacant possession, some new trouble raise :

Haste thee, and from the Paradise of God

Without remorse drive out the sinful pair,

From hallow'd ground th' unholy, and denounce

95

To them and to their progeny from thence

Perpetual Banishment. Yet lest they faint,

For I behold them soften'd and with tears

Bewailing their excess, all terror hide.

Dismiss them not disconsolate ; reveal

100

To Adam what shall come in future days,

As I shall thee enlighten ; intermix

My covenant in the Woman's seed renew'd ;

So send them forth, though sorrowing, yet in peace :

And on the east side of the garden place,

105

Where entrance up from Eden easiest climbs,

Cherubic watch, and of a sword the flame

Wide waving, all approach far off to fright,

And guard all passage to the tree of life.

He ceas'd; and th' archangelic Pow'r prepar'd 110
For swift descent, with him the cohort bright
Of watchful Cherubim descend. Mean while
To resalute the world with sacred light
Leucothea wak'd, and fresh dews imbalm'd
The earth, when Adam and first matron Eve 115
Had ended now their orisons, and found
Strength added from above, now hope to spring
Out of despair, joy, but with fear yet link'd;
Which thus to Eve his welcome words renew'd. 120

* Eve easily may faith admit, that all
The good which we enjoy, from Heav'n descends;
But that from us ought should ascend to Heaven
So prevalent as to concern the mind
Of God high blest, or to incline his will, 125
Hard to believe may seem; yet this will prayer
Or one short sigh of human breath, upborne
Ev'n to the seat of God.* For since I fought
By prayer th' offended Deity to' appease,
Methought I saw him placable and mild, 130
Bending his ear; persuasion in me grew
That I was heard with favour; peace return'd
Home to my breast, and to my memory
His promise, that thy seed shall bruise our foe;
Which then not minded in dismay, yet now 135
Assures me that the bitterness of death
Is past, and we shall live. Whence hail to thee,
Eve rightly call'd, mother of all mankind.

To whom thus Eve with sad demeanour meek.
Ill worthy I such title should belong 140

To me transgressor, who for thee ordain'd
A help, became thy snare ; to me reproach
Rather belongs, distrust and all dispraise :
But infinite in pardon was my Judge,
That I who first brought death on all, am grac'd 145
The source of life ; next favourable thou,
Who highly thus to' intitle me vouchsaf'd,
Far other name deserving. But the field
To labour calls us now with sweat impos'd.
Though after sleepless night ; for see the morn, 150
All unconcern'd with our unrest, begins
Her rosy progress smiling ; let us forth,
I never from thy side henceforth to stray.
What can be toilsome in these pleasant walks ?
Here let us live, though in fall'n state, content.
So spake, so wish'd much humbled Eve, but fate 155
Subscrib'd not ; Nature first gave signs, impress'd
On bird, beast, air ; air suddenly eclips'd
After short blush of morn ; nigh in her sight
The bird of Jove, sloop'd from his aery tour,
Two birds of gayest plum before him drove : 160
Down from a hill the beast that reigns in woods,
First hunter then, pursu'd a gentle brace,
Goodliest of all the forest, hart and hind ;
Direct to th' eastern gate was bent their flight.
Adam observ'd, and with his eye the chase 165
Pursuing, not unmov'd to Eve thus spake.
O Eve, some further change awaits us nigh,
Which Heav'n by these mute signs in nature shews,
Forerunners of his purpose, or to warn 170
Us haply too secure of our discharge
From penalty, because from death releas'd

Some days : how long, and what till then our life,
Who knows ? Or more than this, that we are dust,
And thither must return and be no more ? 175

Why else this double object in our sight
Of flight pursu'd in th' air, and o'er the ground,
One way the self-same hour ? Why in the east
Darkness ere day's mid course, and morning light
More orient in yon western cloud, that draws 180
O'er the blue firmament a radiant white,
And slow descends, with something heav'nly fraught ?

He err'd not, for by this the heav'nly bands
Down from a sky of jasper lighted now
In Paradise, and on a hill made halt, 185

A glorious apparition, had not doubt
And carnal fear that day dimm'd Adam's eye.
Not that more glorious, when the Angels met
Jacob in Mahanaim, where he saw

The field pavilion'd with his guardians bright ; 190
Nor that which on the flaming mount appear'd,
In Dothan, cover'd with a camp of fire,

Against the Syrian king. The Hierarch
In their bright stand there left his Pow'rs to seize
Possession of the garden ; he alone, 195

To find where Adam shelter'd, took his way,
Not unperceiv'd of Adam, who to Eve,
While the great visitant approach'd, thus spake.

Eve, now expect great tidings, which perhaps
Of us will soon determine, or impose 200

New laws to be observ'd ; for I descry
From yonder blazing cloud that veils the hill
One of the heav'nly host, and by his gate

None of the meanest, some great Potentate,
Or of the Thrones above, such majesty
Invests him coming ; yet not terrible,
That I should fear, nor sociably mild,
As Raphael, that I should much confide,
But solemn and sublime, whom not to' offend,
With reverence I must meet, and thou retire. 210

He ended ; and th' Arch-Angel soon drew nigh,
Not in his shape celestial, but as man
Clad to meet man ; over his lucid arms
A military vest of purple flow'd.
His starry helm unbuckled shew'd him prime
In manhood where youth ended ; by his side
As in a glist'ring zodiac hung the sword,
Satan's dire dread, and in his hand the spear. 215
Adam bow'd low ; he kingly from his state
Inclin'd not, but his coming thus declared.

Adam, Heav'n's high behest no preface needs :
Sufficient that thy pray'rs are heard, and Death, 220
Then due by sentence when thou didst transgress,
Defeated of his seizure many days
Giv'n thee of grace, wherein thou mayst repent,
And one bad act with many deeds well done
May'st cover : well may then thy Lord appear'd 225
Redeem thee quite from death's rapacious claim ;
But longer in this Paradise to dwell
Permits not ; to remove thee I am come,
And send thee from the garden forth to till
The ground whence thou wast taken, fitter soil. 230

He added not, for Adam at the news
Heart-struck with chilling gripe of sorrow flood,
That all his senses bound ; Eve, who unseen

Yet all had heard, with audible lament

Discover'd soon the place of her retire.

235

* O unexpected stroke, worse than of Death!

Must I thus leave thee, Paradise? Thus leave

Thee, native soil, these happy walks and shades,

Fit haunt of Gods; where I had hope to spend,

Quiet though sad, the respite of that day

240

That must be mortal to us both. O flowers,

That never will in other climate grow,

My earliest visitation and my last

At ev'n, which I bred up with tender hand

From the first opening bud, and gave you names,

245

Who now shall rear you to the sun, or rank

Your tribes, and water from th' ambrosial fount?

Thee lastly, nuptial bow'r, by me adorn'd

With what to sight or smell was sweet, from thee

How shall I part, and whither wander down

250

Into a lower world, to this obscure

And wild? How shall we breathe in other air

Less pure, accusom'd to immortal fruits?*

Whom thus the angel interrupted mild.

Lament not, Eve, but patiently resign

255

What justly thou hast lost; nor set thy heart,

Thus over fond, on that which is not thine.

Thy going is not lonely; with thee goes

Thy husband; him to follow thou art bound:

Where he abides, think there thy native soil.

260

Adam by this from the cold sudden damp

Recovering, and his scatter'd spi'rits return'd,

To Michael thus his humble words address'd.

Celestial, whether among the Thrones, or nam'd

Of them the high'est, for such of shape may seem

265

Prince above princes, gently hast thou told
 Thy message, which might else in telling wound,
 And in performing end us; what besides
 Of sorrow and dejection and despair
 Our frailty can sustain thy tidings bring, 270
 Departure from this happy place, our sweet
 Recess, and only consolation left
 Familiar to our eyes, all places else
 Inhospitable' appear and desolate,
 Nor knowing us nor known. *And if by prayer 275
 Incessant I could hope to change the will
 Of him who all things can, I could not cease
 To weary him with my assiduous cries.
 But pray'r against his absolute decree
 No more avails than breath against the wind; 280
 Therefore to his great bidding I submit.
 * This most afflicts me, that departing hence,
 As from his face I shall be hid, depriv'd
 His blessed count'nance; here I could frequent
 With worship place by place where he vouchsaf'd 285
 Presence divine, and to my sons relate,
 On this mount he appear'd, under this tree
 Stood visible, among these pines his voice
 I heard, here with him at this fountain talk'd:
 So many grateful altars I would rear 290
 Of grassy turf, and pile up every stone
 Of lustre from the brook, in memory,
 Or monument to ages, and thereon
 Offer sweet smelling gums and fruits and flowers.
 In yonder nether world where shall I seek 295
 His bright appearances, or foot-step trace?
 For though I fled him angry, yet recall'd

To life prolong'd, and promis'd race, I now
Gladly behold though but his utmost skirts
Of glory, and far off his steps adore.*

300

To whom thus Michael with regard benign.

*Adam, thou know'st heav'n his, and all the earth,
Not this rock only; his omnipresence fills
Land, sea, and air, and every kind that lives.

All th' earth he gave thee to possess and rule,
No despicable gift; surmise not then

305

His presence to these narrow bounds confin'd
Of Paradise or Eden: this had been

Perhaps thy capital seat, from whence had spread
All generations, and had hither come

From all the ends of the earth to celebrate

310

And reverence thee their great progenitor.

But this pre-eminence thou' hast lost, brought down
To dwell on even ground now with thy sons:

Yet doubt not but in valley and in plain

God is as here, and will be found alike

315

Present, and of his presence many a sign

Still following thee, still compassing thee round.*

Which that thou may'st believe, and be confirm'd

Ere thou from hence depart, know I am sent

To shew thee what shall come in future days

320

To thee and to thy offspring; good with bad

Expect to hear, supernal grace contending

With sinfulness of men; thereby to learn

True patience, and to temper joy with fear

And pious sorrow, equally inur'd

325

By moderation either state to bear,

Prosperous or adverse; so shalt thou lead

Safest thy life, and best prepar'd endure

Thy mortal passage when it comes. Ascend
 This hill; let Eve (for I have drench'd her eyes) 330
 Here sleep below, while thou to foresight wak'st;
 As once thou slep'st, while she to life was form'd.

To whom thus Adam gratefully reply'd.
 Ascend, I follow thee, safe Guide, the path
 Thou lead'st me', and to the hand of Heav'n submit, 335
 However chaf't'ning to the evil turn
 My obvious breast, aiming to overcome
 By suffering, and earn rest from labour won,
 If so I may attain. So both ascend
 In the visions of God: It was a hill 340
 Of Paradise the highest, from whose top
 The hemisphere of earth in clearest ken
 Stretch'd out to th' amplest reach of prospect lay;
 His eye might there command wherever stood
 City of old or modern fame, the seat 345
 Of mightiest empire: but to nobler sights
 Michael from Adam's eyes the film remov'd,
 Which that false fruit had bred: then purg'd the nerve,
 And from the well of life three drops instill'd.
 So deep the pow'r of these ingredients pierc'd, 350
 Even to the inmost seat of mental sight,
 That Adam now enforc'd to close his eyes,
 Sunk down, and all his spirits became intranc'd;
 But him the gentle Angel by the hand
 Soon rais'd, and his attention thus recall'd. 355

Adam, now ope thine eyes, and first behold
 Th' effects which thy original crime hath wrought
 In some to spring from thee, who never touch'd
 The excepted tree, nor with the Snake conspir'd,
 Nor sinn'd thy sin, yet from that sin derive 360

Corruption to bring forth more violent deeds.

His eyes he open'd, and beheld a field,
Part arable and tilth, whereon were sheaves
New reap'd, the other part sheep-walks and folds;

I' th' midst an altar as the land-mark stood, 365
Rustic, of grassy ford; thither anon

A sweaty reaper from his tillage brought
First fruits, the green ear, and the yellow sheaf,
Uncull'd, as came to hand. A shepherd next
More meek came with the firstlings of his flock 370
Choicest and best; then sacrificing, laid

The inwards and their fat with incense strow'd,
On the cleft wood, and all due rites perform'd.
His offering soon propitious fire from Heaven
Consum'd with nimble glance, and grateful steam; 375
The other's not, for his was not sincere;

Whereat he inly rag'd, and as they talk'd,
Smote him into the midriff with a stone
That beat out life; he fell, and deadly pale
Groan'd out his soul with gushing blood effus'd. 380
Much at that sight was Adam in his heart
Dismay'd, and thus in haste to th' Angel cry'd.

O Teacher, some great mischief hath befall'n
To that meek man, who well had sacrific'd;
Is piety thus and pure devotion paid? 385

T' whom Michael thus, he also mov'd, reply'd.
These two are brethren, Adam, and to come
Out of thy loins; th' unjust the just hath slain,
For envy that his brother's offering found
From Heav'n acceptance; but the bloody fact 390
Will be aveng'd, and the other's faith approv'd
Lose no reward, though here thou see him die,

Rolling in dust and gore. To which our fire.

Alas, both for the deed and for the cause !

* But have I now seen Death ? Is this the way

395

I must return to native dust ? O fight

Of terror, foul and ugly to behold,

Horrid to think, how horrible to feel !*

To whom thus Michael. Death thou hast seen

In his first shape on man ; but many shapes

400

Of Death, and many are the ways that lead

To his grim cave, all dismal ; yet to sense

More terrible at th' entrance than within.

Some, as thou saw'st, by violent stroke shall die,

By fire, flood, famine : by intemp'rance more

405

In meats and drinks, which on the earth shall bring

Diseases dire, of which a monstrous crew

Before thee shall appear ; that thou mayst know

What misery th' inabstinence of Eve

Shall bring on men. Immediately a place

410

Before his eyes appear'd, sad, noisome, dark,

A lazar-house it seem'd, wherein were laid

Numbers of all diseas'd, all maladies

Of ghastly spasm, or racking torture, qualms

Of heart-sick agony, all feverous kinds,

415

Convulsions, epilepsies, fierce catarrhs,

Intestine stone and ulcer, cholic pangs,

Demoniac phrenzy, moaping melancholy,

And moon-struck madness, pining atrophy,

Marasmus and wide-wasting pestilence,

420

Dropsies, and asthma's, and joint-racking rheums.

Dire was the tossing, deep the groans ; Despair

Tended the sick busiest from couch to couch

And over them triumphant Death his dart

Book XI. PARADISE LOST.

301

Shook, but delay'd to strike, though oft invok'd
With vows, as their chief good, and final hope.

425

* Sight so deform what heart of rock could long
Dry-ey'd behold? Adam could not, but wept,
Though not of woman born; compassion quell'd
His best of man, and gave him up to tears*

430

A space, till firmer thoughts restrain'd excess;
And scarce recovering words his plaint renew'd.

* O miserable mankind, to what fall

Degraded, to what wretched state reserv'd!

Better end here unborn. Why is life given

435

To be thus wrested from us? Rather why

Obruded on us thus? Who if we knew

What we receive, would either not accept

Life offer'd, or soon beg to lay it down,

Glad to be so dismiss'd in peace. Can thus

440

Th' image of God in man created once

So goodly and erect, though faulty since,

To such unsightly sufferings be debas'd

Under inhuman pains? Why should not man

Retaining still divine similitude

445

In part, from such deformities be free,

And from his Maker's image sake exempt?*

Their Maker's image, answer'd Michael, then

Forsook them, when themselves they vilify'd

To serve ungovern'd appetite, and took

450

His image whom they serv'd, a brutish vice,

Therefore so abject is their punishment,

Disfiguring not God's likeness, but their own;

Or if his likeness, by themselves defac'd,

While they pervert pure nature's heathful rules

455

To loathsome sickness; worthily, since they
God's image did not reverence in themselves.

I yield it just, said Adam, and submit.

But is there yet no other way, besides
These painful passages, how we may come 460
To death, and mix with our connatural dust?

* There is, said Michael, if thou well observe
The rule of not too much, by temp'rance taught,
In what thou eat'st and drink'st, seeking from thence
Due nourishment, not gluttonous delight, 465
Till many years over thy head return :
So may'st thou live, till like ripe fruit thou drop
Into thy mother's lap, or be with ease
Gather'd, not harshly pluck'd, for death mature.
This is old age; but then thou must outlive 470
Thy youth, thy strength, thy beauty, which will change
To wither'd, weak, and gray; thy senses then
Obtuse, all taste of pleasure must forego,
To what thou hast; and for the air of youth,
Hopeful and chearful, in thy blood will reign 475
A melancholy damp of cold and dry,
To weigh thy spirits down, and last consume
The balm of life. To whom our ancestor.

* Henceforth I fly not death, nor would prolong
Life much, bent rather how I may be quit 480
Fairest and easiest of this cumbrous charge,
Which I must keep till my appointed day
Of rendring up, and patiently attend
My dissolution. Michael reply'd.

* Nor love thy life, nor hate; but what thou liv'st 485
Live well, how long or short permit to Heaven;*
And now prepare thee for another fight.

He look'd, and saw a spacious plain, whereon
 Were tents of various hue ; by some were herds
 Of cattle grazing ; others whence the sound 490
 Of instruments that made melodious chime.
 In other part stood one who at the forge
 Lab'ring, two massy clods of ir'on and brass
 Had melted ; next the liquid ore he drain'd
 Into fit molds prepar'd ; from which he form'd 495
 First his own tools ; then, what might else be wrought
 Fusil or grav'n in metal. After these,
 But on the hither side, a different sort
 From the high neigh'bring hills, which was their seat
 Down to the plain descended : by their guise 500
 Just men they seem'd and all their study bent
 To worship God aright, and know his works
 Not hid ; nor those things last which might preserve
 Freedom and peace to men. They on the plain
 Long had not walk'd, when from the tents behold 505
 A bevy of fair women, richly gay
 In gems and wanton dress ; to th' harp they sung
 Soft amorous ditties, and in dance came on ;
 The men though grave, ey'd them, and let their eyes
 Rove without rein, till in the amorous net 510
 First caught, they lik'd, and each his liking chose :
 And now of love they treat, till th' evening star,
 Love's harbinger, appear'd ; then all in heat
 They light the nuptial torch, and bid invoke
 Hymen, then first to marriage rites invok'd : 515
 With feast and music all the tents resound.
 Such happy interview and fair event
 And charming symphonies attach'd the heart

Of Adam, soon inclin'd t' admit delight,
The bent of nature; which he thus express'd. 520

True opener of mine eyes, prime Angel blest,
Much better seems this vision, and more hope
Of peaceful days portends, than those two past;
Those were of hate and death, or pain much worse,
Here nature seems fulfill'd in all her ends. 525

To whom thus Michael. Judge not what is best
By pleasure, though to nature seeming meet,
Created, as thou art, to nobler end
Holy and pure, conformity divine.
Those tents thou saw'st so pleasant, were the tents 530
Of wickedness, wherein shall dwell his race
Who slew his brother. Studious they appear
Of arts that polish life, inventors rare,
Unmindful of their Maker, though his Spirit
Taught them, but they his gifts acknowledg'd none. 535
Yet they a beauteous offspring shall beget;
For that fair female troop thou saw'st, so gay,
Yet empty of all good wherein consists
Woman's domestic honour and chief praise;
Bred only and completed to the taste 540
Of lustful appetite, to sing, to dance.
To these that sober race of men, whose lives
Religious titled them the sons of God.
Shall yield up all their virtue, all their fame
Ignobly, to the trains and to the smiles 545
Of these fair atheists and now swim in joy,
And laugh, for which the world ere long must weep.

* To whom thus Adam of short joy bereft.
O pity' and shame, that they who to live well
Enter'd so fair, should turn aside, to tread 550

Paths indirect, or in the mid way faint!
But still I see the tenour of Man's woe
Holds on the same, from Woman to begin.

From Man's effeminate slackness it begins,
Said th' Angel, who should better hold his place 555
By wisdom, and superior gifts receiv'd.
But now prepare thee for another scene.

He look'd, and saw wide territory spread
Before him, towns, and rural works between,
Cities of men with lofty gates and towers, 560
Concourse in arms, fierce faces threatening war,
Giants of mighty bone, and bold emprise;
Part wield their arms, part curb the foaming steed,
Single or in array of battle rang'd

Both horse and foot, nor idly must'ring flood; 565
One way a band select from forage drives
An herd of bees, fair oxen and fair kine
From a fat meadow ground, or fleecy flock,
Ewes and their bleating lambs over the plain,
Their booty: others to a city strong 570
Lay siege, incamp'd; by battery, scale, and mine,
Assaulting; others from the wall defend
With dart and javelin, stones and sulphurous fire;
On each hand slaughter and gigantic deeds.

In other part the scepter'd heralds call 575
To council in the city gates: anon
Grey-headed men and grave, with warriors mix'd,
Assemble, and harangues are heard: but soon
In factious opposition, till at last
Of middle age one rising, eminent 580
In wise deport, spake much of right and wrong,

Of justice, of religion, truth and peace,
 And judgment from above : him old and young
 Exploded and had seiz'd with violent hands,
 Had not a cloud descending snatch'd him thence 585
 Unseen amid the throng : so violence
 Proceeded, and oppression, and sword-law
 Through all the plain, and refuge none was found.
 Adam was all in tears, and to his guide
 Lamenting turn'd full sad ; O what are these, 590
 Death's ministers, not men, who thus deal death
 Inhumanly to men, and multiply
 Ten thousand fold the sin of him who slew
 His brother : for of whom such massacre
 Make they but of their brethren, men of men ? 595
 But who was that just man, who had not Heaven
 Rescu'd, had in his righteousness been lost ?

To whom thus Michael. These are the product
 Of those ill-mated marriages thou saw'st ;
 Where good with bad were match'd, who of themselves 600
 Abhor to join : and by imprudence mix'd,
 Produce prodigious births of body' or mind.
 Such were these giants, men of high renown ;
 For in those days might only shall be' admir'd,
 And valour and heroic virtue call'd ; 605
 Thus fame shall be achiev'd, renown on earth,
 And what most merits fame in silence hid.
 But he the sev'nth from thee, whom thou beheldst
 The only righteous in a world perverse,
 And therefore hated, therefore so beset 610
 With foes for daring single to be just,
 And utter odious truth, that God would come
 To judge them with his Saints : him the most High

Rapt in a balmy cloud winged steeds
 Did, as thou saw'st, receive, to walk with God 615
 High in salvation and the climes of bliss,
 Exempt from death ; to shew thee what reward
 Awaits the good, the rest what punishment ;
 Which now direct thine eyes and soon behold.

He look'd, and saw the face of things quite chang'd 620
 The brazen throat of war had ceas'd to roar ;
 All now was turn'd to jollity and game,
 Marrying or prostituting, as befel,
 Rape or adultery, where passing fair
 Allur'd them ; thence from cups to civil broils. 625
 At length a reverend fire among them came,
 And of their doings great dislike declar'd
 And testify'd against their ways ; he oft
 Frequented their assemblies, where so met,
 Triumphs or festivals, and to them preach' 630
 Conversion and repentance, as to souls
 In prison under judgments imminent :
 But all in vain : which when he saw, he ceas'd
 Contending, and remov'd his tents far off ;
 Then from the mountain hewing timber tall, 635
 Began to build a vessel of huge bulk,
 Measur'd by cubit, length and breadth, and height.
 Smear'd round with pitch, and in the side a door
 Contriv'd, and of provisions laid in large
 For man and beast : when lo a wonder strange ! 640
 Of every beast, and bird, and insect small
 Came sev'ns, and pairs, and enter'd in, as taught
 Their order ; last the fire, and his three sons
 With their four wives ; and God made fast the door.
 *Mean while the south wind rose, and with black wings 645

With hovering, all the clouds together drove
 From under Heav'n; and now the thicken'd sky
 Like a dark cieling stood; down rush'd the rain
 Impetuous, and continu'd till the earth
 No more was seen; the floating vessel swum
 Uplifted, and secure with beaked prow
 Rode tilting o'er the waves; all dwellings else
 Flood overwhelm'd, and them with all their pomp
 Deep under water roll'd; sea cover'd sea,
 Sea without shore; and in their palaces
 Where luxury late reign'd, sea-monsters whelp'd
 And stabled; of mankind, so numerous late,
 All left, in one small bottom swum imbark'd.
 *How didst thou grieve then, Adam, to behold
 The end of all thy offspring, end so sad,
 Depopulation? There another flood,
 Of tears and sorrow, a flood thee also drown'd
 And sunk thee as thy sons; till gently rear'd
 By th' Angel, on thy feet thou stood'st at last,
 Though comfortless, as when a father mourns
 His children, all in view destroy'd at once;*
 And scarce to th' Angel utter'd'st thus thy plaint.

O visions ill foreseen! Better had I
 Liv'd ignorant of future, so had borne
 My part of evil only, each day's lot
 Enough to bear; not those that were dispens'd
 The burd'n of many ages. Let none seek
 Henceforth to be foretold what shall befall
 Him or his children; evil he may be sure,
 Which neither his foreknowing can prevent,
 And he the future evil shall no less
 In apprehension than in substance feel

650

655

660

665

670

675

Bo
 Gr
 Ma
 Fan
 Wa
 Wh
 All
 Peac
 How
 And
 T
 In tr
 Firt
 And
 Who
 Subd
 Fame
 Shall
 Surfe
 Raife
 The c
 Shall
 And f
 In sha
 Again
 Thence
 World
 Shall
 More
 So all
 One m
 In a da
 Again

Grievous to bear : but that care now is past.

Man is not whom to warn : those few escap'd

Famine and anguish will at last consume

680

Wand'ring that watry desert : I had hope

When violence was ceas'd, and war on earth,

All would have then gone well, but now I see

Peace to corrupt no less than war to waste.

How comes it thus ? Unfold, celestial Guide,

685

And whether here the race of man will end.

To whom thus Michael. Those whom last thou saw'st

In triumph and luxurious wealth, are they

First seen in acts of prowess eminent

And great exploits, but of true virtue void ;

690

Who having spilt much blood, and done much waste

Subduing nations, and atchiev'd thereby

Fame in the world, high titles, and rich prey,

Shall change their course to pleasure, ease, and sloth,

Surfeit, and lust, till wantonnefs and pride

695

Raise out of friendship hostile deeds in peace.

The conquer'd also, and enslav'd by war

Shall with their freedom lost all virtue lose

And fear of God, from whom their piety feign'd

In sharp contest of battle found no aid

700

Against invaders ; therefore cool'd in zeal

Thenceforth shall practise how to live secure,

Worldly or dissolute, on what their lords

Shall leave them to enjoy ; for the earth shall bear

More than enough, that temp'rance may be try'd.

705

So all shall turn degenerate, all deprav'd ;

One man except, the only son of light

In a dark age, against example good,

Against allurement, custom, and a world

Offended; fearless of reproach and scorn,
 Or violence, he of their wicked ways
 Shall them admonish, and before them set
 The paths of righteousness, denouncing wrath
 On their impenitence; and shall return
 Of them derided, but of God observ'd
 The one just man alive: by his command
 Shall build a wondrous ark, as thou beheldst,
 To save himself and household from amidst
 A world devote to universal wreck,
 No sooner he with them of man and beast
 Select for life shall in the ark be lodg'd,
 And shelter'd round, but all the cataracts
 Of Heav'n set open on the earth shall pour
 Rain day and night; all fountains of the deep
 Broke up, shall heave the ocean to usurp
 Beyond all bounds, till inundation rise
 Above the highest hills; * then shall this mount
 Of Paradise by might of waves be mov'd
 Out of his place, push'd by the horned flood,
 With all his verdure spoil'd, and trees adrift,
 Down the great river to the opening gulf,
 And there take root an island salt and bare,
 The haunt of seals, and ores, and sea-mews clang: *
 To teach thee that God attributes to place
 No sanctity, if none be thither brought
 By men who there frequent, or therein dwell.
 And now what further shall ensue, behold.

He look'd, and saw the ark hull on the flood,
 Which now abated; for the clouds were fled,
 Driv'n by a keen north-wind, that blowing dry
 Wrinkled the face of deluge, as decay'd;

710

715

720

725

730

735

740

Book
 And t
 Gaz'd
 As afte
 From
 With f
 His flu
 The ar
 Fast on
 And no
 With c
 Tow'ar
 Anon c
 The an
 Then w
 Gratefu
 A dew
 Conspic
 Betoken
 Wherea
 Greatly
 O the
 As prese
 At this
 With al
 Far less
 Of wick
 For one
 That G
 From hi
 *But say
 Distende
 Or serve

And the clear sun on his wide watry glafs
 Gaz'd hot, and of the fresh wave largely drew,
 As after thirst, which made their flowing shrink
 From standing lake to trippingebb, that stole 745
 With soft foot tow'ards the deep, who now had stopt
 His sluices' as the Heav'n his windows shut.

The ark no more now flotes, but seems on ground
 Fast on the top of some high mountain fix'd.
 And now the tops of hills as rocks appear : 750

With clamour thence the rapid currents drive
 Tow'ards the retreating sea their furious tide.
 Anon dry ground appears, and from his ark
 The ancient fire descends with all his train ;
 Then with uplifted hands, and eyes devout, 755
 Grateful to Heav'n, over his head beholds

A dewy cloud, and in the cloud a bow
 Conspicuous with three list'd colours gay,
 Betokening peace from God, and covenant new.
 Whereat the heart of Adam erst so sad 760
 Greatly rejoic'd, and thus his joy broke forth.

O thou who future things canst represent
 As present, heav'nly Instructor, I revive
 At this last sight, assur'd that man shall live
 With all the creatures, and their seed preserve. 765
 Far less I now lament for one whole world
 Of wicked sons destroy'd, than I rejoice
 For one man found so perfect and so just,
 That God vouchsafes to raise another world
 From him, and all his anger to forget. 770

*But say, what mean those colour'd streaks in Heaven,
 Distended as the brow of God appeas'd,
 Or serve they as a slow'ry verge to bind

The fluid skirts of that same watry cloud,
Left it again dissolve and show'r the earth ?*

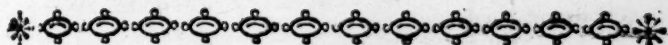
775

To whom th' Arch-Angel. Dexterously thou aim'st:
So willingly doth God remit his ire,
Such grace shall one just man find in his sight,
That he relents, not to blot out mankind,
And makes a covenant never to destroy
The earth again by flood, nor let the sea
Surpass his bound, nor rain to drown the world
With man therein or beast ; but when he brings
Over the earth a cloud, will therein set
His triple-colour'd bow, whereon to look
And call to mind his covenant : day and night,
Seed-time and harvest, heat and hoary frost
Shall hold their course, till fire purge all things new,
Both Heav'n and Earth, wherein the just shall dwell.

780

785

*



Notes on PARADISE LOST.

B O O K XI.

- Ver. 3. *Prevenient*.—Preventing Grace.
- Ver. 10. *Dimensionless*.—As being of a Spiritual Nature.
- Ver. 60. *Peccant*.—Sinning.
- Ver. 123. *Leucothea*.—The Dawn of Day.
- Ver. 130. *Placable*.—Appeasable.
- Ver. 139. *Eve* or *Havah* signifies *to live*. *Aery Tour*.—
Whirling about in the Air.
- Ver. 159. *The Bird of Jove*.—The Eagle.
- Ver. 180. *More orient*.—More bright.
- Ver. 198. *Pavilion'd*.—Cover'd with Tents. Gen. xxxii. 2.
- Ver. 200. *In Dothan*.—2 Kings vi. 13, &c.
- Ver. 203. *The Hierarch*.—The Holy Prince.
- Ver. 223. *Lucid*.—Bright.
- Ver. 225. The *Zodiac* is, a broad Circle on the Celestial
Globe, which marks out the yearly Course of the Sun.
- Ver. 238. *Permit's not*.—Is not permitted.
- Ver. 283. *Affiduous*.—Constantly repeated.
- Ver. 302. *In memory*.—For myself.—*A monument*—For
my Posterity.
- Ver. 308. *Promised race*.—Having children promised.
- Ver. 347. *Obvious*.—Ready to meet it.

- Ver. 361. *Mental Sight*.—The eye of the mind.
- Ver. 376. *Rustic*.—Rough, unadorn'd. *Of grassy Sord.*
—Of green Turf.
- Ver. 391. *Effused*.—Poured out.
- Ver. 422. *A Lazar-house*.—An Hospital.
- Ver. 424. *Spasm*.—The Cramp.
- Ver. 428. *Demoniac Phrenzy*.—Those term'd Lunatics
by one Evangelist, are frequently term'd *Demoniacs*, or
Possess'd of the Devil by another,
- Ver. 429. *Atrophy* and *Marasmus* are a kind of Consump-
tion.
- Ver. 447. *Obtruded*.—Forced upon us.
- Ver. 483. *Obtuse*.—Blunted, dull.
- Ver. 507. *Fusil*.—Melted, cast.
- Ver. 513. *Nor those things Lost*.—In their Thoughts.
- Ver. 516. *A Bevy*.—A Company.
- Ver. 525. *Hymen*.—The Heathen God of Marriage.
- Ver. 528. *Attached*.—Seised, got possession of.
- Ver. 551. *Appetence*.—Desire, Appetite.
- Ver. 572. *Emprise*.—Enterprize.
- Ver. 516. *The City Gates*.—The ancient Place of Judica-
ture.
- Ver. 594. *Exploded*.—Rejected, hissed at.
- Ver. 609. *Ill mated*.—Ill pair'd, misjoin'd.
- Ver. 671. *Depopulation*.—Dispeopling of the Earth.
- Ver. 681. *Dispensed*.—Distributed, dealt out in parcels.
- Ver. 706. *Hostile Deeds*.—Acts of Enmity.
- Ver. 730. *With them of Man and Beast Select for Life*.—
With those Men and Beasts whom God had set apart,
to preserve them.
- Ver. 739. *Pushed by the horned Flood*.—A River oppos'd

in its Course by an Island or Mountain, divides, and seems to push as with Horns.

Ver. 741. *To the opening Gulf*.—The Sea opening wider and wider.

Ver. 743. *Orcs*.—A large kind of Sea-fish. *Clang*, is properly the noise made by the Flight of large Flocks of Birds.

Ver. 748. A Ship is said to *hull*, when her Sails are taken in, and she floats to and fro.

Ver. 755. *Tripping*.—Running swiftly along.

Ver. 768. *Listed*.—Bordering on each other.



PARADISE LOST.

BOOK XII.

THE ARGUMENT.

The Angel Michael continues from the flood to relate what shall succeed; then in the mention of Abraham, comes by degrees to explain, who that Seed of the Woman shall be, which was promised Adam and Eve in the fall; his incarnation, death, resurrection and ascension; the state of the church till his second coming. Adam greatly satisfied and recomforted by these relations and promises descends the hill with Michael; wakens Eve, who all the while had slept, but with gentle dreams compos'd to quietness of mind and submission. Michael in either hand leads them out of Paradise, the fiery sword waving behind them, and the Cherubim taking their stations to guard the place.

AS one who in his journey baits at noon, (paus'd
 Though bent on speed; - so here the Arch-Angel
 Betwixt the world destroy'd and world restor'd,
 If Adam ought perhaps might interpose;
 Then with transition sweet new speech resumes. 5

Thus thou hast seen one world begin and end;
 And man as from a second stock proceed.
 Much thou hast yet to see, but I perceive
 Thy mortal fight to fail; objects divine
 Must needs impair and weary human sense; 10
 Henceforth what is to come I will relate,

Thou therefore give due audience, and attend.

This second source of men, while yet but few,
 And while the dread of judgment past remains
 Fresh in their minds, fearing the Deity, 15
 Shall lead their lives, and multiply apace,
 Lab'ring the soil, and reaping plenteous crop,
 Corn, wine and oil; and from the herd or flock,
 Oft sacrificing bullock, lamb, or kid,
 Shall spend their days in joy unblam'd, and dwell 30
 Long time in peace by families and tribes
 Under paternal rule: till one shall rise
 Of proud ambitious heart, who not content
 With fair equality, fraternal state,
 Will arrogate dominion undeserv'd 25
 Over his brethren, and quite dispossess
 Concord and law of nature from the earth.
 Hunting (and men not beasts shall be his game)
 With war and hostile snare such as refuse
 Subjection to his empire tyrannous: 30
 A mighty hunter thence he shall be stil'd
 Before the Lord, as in despite of Heaven.
 He with a crew, whom like ambition joins
 Marching from Eden tow'ards the West, shall find
 The plain wherein a black bituminous gurge 35
 Boils out from under ground, the mouth of hell:
 Of brick, and of that stuff they cast to build
 A city, and tow'r, whose top may reach to Heaven;
 And get themselves a name, lest far dispers'd
 In foreign land their memory be lost: 40
 But God who oft descends to visit men
 Comes down to see their city, ere the tower

Obstruſt Heav'n tow'rs, and in deriſion ſets
 Upon their tongues a various ſpi'rit, to raſe
 Quite out their native language, and inſtead 45
 To ſow a jangling noiſe of words unknown.
 Forthwith a hideous gabble riſes loud
 Among the builders; each to other calls
 Not underſtood, till hoarſe, and all in rage,
 As mock'd, they ſtorm'd; thus was the building left 50
 *Ridiculous, and the work Confuſion nam'd.

Whereto thus Adam fatherly diſpleas'd.
 O execrable ſon to aſpire
 Above his brethren, to himſelf aſſuming
 Authority uſurp'd, from God not given: 55
 He gave us only over beaſt, fiſh, fowl
 Dominion abſolute; that right we hold
 By his donation; but man over men
 He made not lord; ſuch title to himſelf
 Reſerving, human left from human free. 60

To whom thus Michael. Juſtly thou abhorr'ſt
 That ſon, who on the quiet ſtate of men
 Such trouble brought, affecting to ſubdue
 Rational liberty; yet known withal
 Since thy original lapſe, true liberty 65
 Is loſt, which always with right reaſon dwells
 Twinn'd, and from her hath no dividual being:
 Reaſon in man obſcur'd, or not obey'd,
 Immediately inordinate deſires
 And upſtart paſſions catch the government 70
 From reaſon, and to ſervitude reduce
 Man till then free. Therefore ſince he permits
 Within himſelf unworthy pow'rs to reign
 Over free reaſon, God in judgment juſt

Subjects him from without to violent lords ; 75
 Who oft as undeservedly intrall
 His outward freedom : tyranny must be,
 Though to the tyrant thereby no excuse.
 Thus will this latter, as the former world,
 Still tend from bad to worse, till God at last 80
 Wearied with their iniquities withdraw
 His presence from among them, and avert
 His holy eyes ; resolving from thenceforth
 To leave them to their own polluted ways ;
 And one peculiar nation to select 85
 From all the rest, of whom to be invoc'd,
 A nation from one faithful man to spring ;
 Him on this side Euphrates yet residing,
 Bred up in idol worship. O that men
 (Can'st thou believe ?) should be so stupid grown, 90
 While yet the patriarch liv'd who scap'd the flood,
 As to forsake the living God, and fall
 To worship their own work in wood and stone
 For gods ! Yet him God the most High vouchsafes
 To call by vision from his father's house,
 His kindred and false gods, into a land 95
 Which he will shew him, and from him will raise
 A mighty nation, and upon him shower
 His benediction so, that in his seed
 All nations shall be blest. He straight obeys, 100
 Not knowing to what land, yet firm believes.
 I see him, but thou can'st not, with what faith
 He leaves his Gods, his friends, and native soil
 Ur of Chaldea, passing now the ford
 To Haran, after him a cumbrous train 105
 Of herds and flocks, and numerous servitude ;

Not wand'ring poor, but trusting all his wealth
 With God, who call'd him, in a land unknown
 Canaan he now attains; I see his tents
 Pitch'd about Secchem, and the neigh'ring plain 110
 Of Moreh; there by promise he receives
 Gift to his progeny of all that land.
 This ponder, that all nations of the earth
 Shall in his seed be blessed; by that seed
 Is meant thy great deliverer, who shall bruise 115
 The Serpent's head; whereof to thee anon
 Plainlier shall be reveal'd. This patriarch blest,
 Whom faithful Abraham due time shall call,
 A son, and of his son a grand child leaves,
 Like him in faith, in wisdom, and renown, 120
 The grand-child with twelve sons increas'd departs
 From Canaan, to a land hereafter call'd
 Egypt, divided by the river Nile;
 See where it flows, disgorging at sev'n mouths
 Into the sea: to sojourn in that land 125
 He comes invited by a younger son
 In time of dearth, a son whose worthy deeds
 Raise him to be the second in that realm
 Of Pharaoh: where he dies, and leaves his race
 Growing into a nation, and now grown 130
 Suspected to a sequent king, who seeks
 To stop their overgrowth, as inmate guests
 Too numerous; whence of guests he makes them slaves
 Inhospitably, and kills their infant males:
 Till by two brethren (those two brethren call 135
 Moses and Aaron) sent from God to claim
 His people from inthrallment, they return
 With glory' and spoil back to their promis'd land.

But first the lawless tyrant, who denies
 To know their God, or message to regard, 140
 Must be compell'd by signs and judgments dire.
 To blood unshed the rivers must be turn'd;
 Frogs, lice, and flies must all his palace fill
 With loth'd intrusion, and fill all the land;
 His cattel must of rot and murrain die; 145
 Botches and blains must all his flesh imboss,
 And all his people; thunder mix'd with hail,
 Hail mix'd with fire must rend th' Egyptian sky,
 And wheel on th' earth, devouring where it rolls;
 What it devours not, herb, or fruit, or grain, 150
 A darksome cloud of locusts swarming down
 Must eat, and on the ground leave nothing green;
 Darkness must overshadow all his bounds,
 Palpable darkness, and blot out three days;
 Last with one midnight stroke all the first-born 155
 Of Egypt must lie dead. Thus with ten wounds
 The river-dragon tam'd at length submits
 To let his sojourners depart, and oft
 Humbles his stubborn heart, but still as ice
 More harden'd after thaw, till in his rage 160
 Pursuing whom he late dismiss'd, the sea
 Swallows him with his host, but lets them pass
 As on dry land between two crystal walls.
 God present in his Angel, then shall go
 Before them in a cloud, and pill'ar of fire, 165
 By day a cloud; by night a pill'ar of fire,
 To guide them in their journey, and remove
 Behind them, while the obdurate king pursues.
 Moses once more his potent rod extends
 Over the sea; the sea his rod obeys; 170

On their embattel'd ranks the waves return,
 And overwhelm their war : the race elect
 Safe towards Canaan from the shore advance
 Through the wild desert, not the readiest way,
 Left entring on the Canaanite alarm'd 173
 War terrify them inexpert, and fear
 Return them back to Egypt, choosing rather
 Inglorious life with servitude; for life
 To noble and ignoble is more sweet
 Untrain'd in arms, where rashness leads not on, 180
 God from the mount of Sinai, whose grey top
 Shall tremble, he descending will himself
 In thunder, lightning, and loud trumpets sound,
 Ordain them laws; part such as appertain
 To civil justice, part religious rites 185
 Of sacrifice, informing them, by types
 And shadows, of that destin'd Seed to bruise
 The Serpent, by what means he shall achieve
 Mankind's deliverance. But the voice of God
 To mortal ear is dreadful; they beseech 190
 That Moses might report to them his will,
 And terror cease. He grants what they besought,
 Instructed that to God is no access
 Without mediator, whose high office now
 Moses in figure bears to introduce 195
 One greater, of whose day he shall foretel,
 And all the prophets in their age the times
 Of great Messiah sung. Thus laws and rites
 Establish'd, (such delight hath God in men
 Obedient to his will,) At length they come, 200
 Conducted by his Angel to the land
 Promis'd to Abraham and his seed : the rest

Were long to tell, how many battles fought,
How many kings destroy'd, and kingdoms won,
Or how the sun shall in mid Heav'n stand still 205
A day entire, and night's due course adjourn.

Here Adam interpos'd. O sent from Heaven,
Inlightner of my darkness, gracious things
Thou hast reveal'd, those chiefly which concern
Just Abraham and his seed : now first I find 210
Mine eyes true opening, and my heart much eas'd,
Erewhile perplex'd with thoughts what would become
Of me and all mankind : but now I see
His day, in whom all nations shall be blest.

This yet I apprehend not, why to those 215
Among whom God will deign to dwell on earth
So many and so various laws are giv'n ;
So many laws argue so many sins
Among them ; how can God with such reside ?

To whom thus Michael. Doubt not but that sin 220
Will reign among them, as of thee begot ;
And therefore was law given them to evince
Their natural pravity, that when they see
Law can discover sin, but not remove
Save by those shadowy expiations weak, 225
The blood of bulls and goats, they may conclude
Some blood more precious must be paid for man.
So law appears imperfect, and but given
With purpose to resign them in full time
Up to a better covenant, disciplin'd 230

From shadowy types to truth, from flesh to spirit,
From imposition of strict laws to free
Acceptance of large grace, from servile fear
To filial, works of law, to works of faith.

And therefore shall not Moses, though of God
 Highly belov'd, being but the minister 235
 Of law, his people into Canaan lead ;
 But Joshua whom the Gentiles Jesus call,
 His name and office bearing, who shall quell
 The adversary Serpent, and bring back 240
 Through the world's wilderness long wander'd man
 Safe to eternal Paradise of rest.
 Mean while they in their earthly Canaan plac'd
 Longtime shall dwell and prosper, but when sins
 National interrupt their public peace, 245
 Provoking God to raise them enemies ;
 From whom as oft he saves them penitent
 By judges first, then under kings ; of whom
 The second, both for piety renown'd
 And puissant deeds, a promise shall receive 250
 Irrevocable, that his regal throne
 For ever shall endure ; the like shall sing
 All prophecy, that of the royal stock
 Of David (so I name this king) shall rise
 A Son, the Woman's seed to thee foretold, 255
 Foretold to Abraham, as in whom shall trust
 All nations, and to kings foretold, of kings
 The last, for of his reign shall be no end.
 But first a long succession must ensue,
 And his next son, for wealth and wisdom fam'd, 260
 The clouded ark of God, till then in tents
 Wand'ring, shall in a glorious temple' inshrine.
 Such follow him as shall be register'd
 Part good, part bad, of bad the longer scroll,
 Whose foul idolatries, and other faults 265
 Heap'd to the popular sum, will so incense

God, as to leave them, and expose their land,
 Their city', his temple, and his holy ark
 With all his sacred things, a scorn and prey
 To that proud city, whose high walls thou saw'st 270
 Left in confusion, Babylon thence call'd.

There in captivity he lets them dwell
 The space of seventy years, then brings them back,
 Remembring mercy, and his covenant sworn
 To David, stablish'd as the days of Heaven. 275

Return'd from Babylon by leave of kings
 Their lords, whom God dispos'd, the house of God
 They first re-edify, and for a while

In mean estate live moderate, till grown
 In wealth and multitude, factious they grow. 280

But first among the priests dissension springs,
 Men who attend the altar, and should most
 Endeavour peace: their strife polluted brings
 Upon the temple' itself: at last they seize
 The sceptre, and regard not David's sons, 285

Then lose it to a stranger, that the true
 Anointed king Messiah might be born
 Barr'd of his right. Yet at his birth a star
 Unseen before in Heav'n, proclaims him come.
 A virgin is his mother, but his sire 290

The pow'r of the most High; he shall ascend
 The throne hereditary, and bound his reign
 With earth's wide bounds, his glory with the Heav'ns.

He ceas'd, discerning Adam with such joy
 Surcharg'd, as had like grief been dew'd in tears, 295
 Without the vent of words, which these he breath'd.

O prophet of glad tidings, finisher

Of utmost hope ! now clear I understand
 What oft my steadiest thoughts have search'd in vain ;
 Why our great expectation should be call'd 300

The seed of Woman. Virgin Mother, hail,
 High in thy love of Heav'n, yet from my loins
 Thou shalt proceed, and from thy womb the Son
 Of God most High ; so God with Man unites.
 Needs must the Serpent now his capital bruise 305
 Expect with mortal pain : say where and when
 Their fight, what stroke shall bruise the victor's heel ?

To whom thus Michael. Dream not of their fight,
 As of a duel : not therefore joins the Son
 Manhood to God-head, with more strength to foil 310
 Thy enemy ; nor so is overcome

Satan, whose fall from Heav'n, a deadlier bruise,
 Disabled not to give thee thy death's wound :
 Which he, who comes thy Saviour, shall recure,
 Not by destroying Satan, but his works 315

In thee and in thy seed. Nor can this be,
 But by fulfilling (that which thou didst want,)
 Obedience to the law of God, impos'd

On penalty of death, and suffering death, 320
 The penalty to thy transgression due,
 And due to theirs which out of thine will grow :
 So only can high justice rest appaid.

The law of God exact he shall fulfil
 Both by obedience and by love, though love
 Alone fulfil the law ; thy punishment 325

He shall endure by coming in the flesh
 To a reproachful life and cursed death,
 Proclaiming life to all who shall believe.
 For this he shall live hated, be blasphem'd,

Judg'd, and to death condemn'd, nail'd to the cross 330

By his own nation, slain for bringing life ;

But to the cross he nails thy enemies,

The law that is against thee, and the sins

Of all mankind, with him there crucify'd

Never to hurt them more who rightly trust

535

In this his satisfaction. So he dies,

But soon revives ; death over him no power

Shall long usurp ; ere the third dawning light

Return, the stars of morn shall see him rise,

Thy ransom paid, which man from death redeems, 340

His death for man, as many as offer'd life

Neglect not, and the benefit embrace

By faith not void of works. This God-like act

Annuls thy doom, the death thou shouldst have dy'd

In sin for ever lost from life ; this act

345

Shall bruise the head of Satan, crush his strength,

Nor after resurrection shall he stay

Longer on earth than certain times to' appear

To his disciples, men who in his life

Still follow'd him ; to them shall leave in charge

350

To teach all nations, them who shall believe

Baptizing in the profluent stream, the sign

Of washing them from guilt of sin to life

Pure, and in mind prepar'd, if so befall,

For death, like that which the Redeemer dy'd.

355

All nations they shall teach ; for from that day

Not only to the sons of Abraham's loins

Salvation shall be preach'd, but to the sons

Of Abraham's faith wherever through the world

So in his seed all nations shall be blest.

360

Then to the Heav'n of Heav'ns he shall ascend
 With victory, triumphing, and resume
 His seat at God's right hand, exalted high
 Above all names in Heav'n; and thence shall come,
 When this world's dissolution shall be ripe, 366
 With glory' and pow'r to judge both quick and dead,
 To judge th' unfaithful dead, but to reward
 His faithful, and receive them into blifs.

So spake th' Arch-Angel Michael, then paus'd
 As at the world's great period; and our fire 370
 Replete with joy and wonder thus reply'd.

O goodness infinite, Goodness immense!
 That all this good of evil shall produce!
 But say, if our Deliverer up to Heaven
 Must reascend, what will betide the few 375
 His faithful, left among th' unfaithful herd,
 The enemies of truth? Who then shall guide
 His people, who defend? Will they not deal
 Worse with his followers than with him they dealt?

Be sure they will, said th' Angel: but from Heaven 380
 He to his own a Comforter will send,
 His Spi'rit within them, and the law of faith
 Working through love, upon their hearts shall write,
 To guide them in all truth, and also arm
 With spiritual armour, able to resist 385
 Satan's assaults; and quench his fiery darts;
 What man can do against them, not afraid,
 Though to the death, against such cruelties
 With inward consolations recompens'd;
 And oft supported so as shall amaze 390
 Their proudest persecutors. Thus they win
 Great numbers of each nation to receive

With joy the tidings brought from Heav'n ; at length
 Their ministry perform'd, and race well run,
 Their doctrine and their story written left, 395
 They die ; but in their room, as they forewarn,
 Wolves shall succeed for teachers, grievous wolves,
 Who all the sacred mysteries of Heaven
 To their own vile advantages shall turn
 Of lucre and ambition, and the truth 400
 With superstitious and traditions taint.
 Then shall they seek to' avail themselves of names,
 Places, and titles, and with these to join
 Secular pow'r, though feigning still to act
 By spiritual, to themselves appropriating 405
 The Spirit of God, promis'd alike and given
 To all believers ; and from that pretence,
 Spiritual laws by carnal pow'r shall force :
 Whence heavy persecution shall arise
 On all who in the worship persevere 410
 Of spi'rit and truth ; the rest, far greater part,
 Will deem in outward rites and specious forms
 Religion satisfy'd ; truth shall retire
 Bestruck with stand'rous darts, and works of faith
 Rarely be found : so shall the world go on, 415
 Under her own weight groaning, till the day
 Appear of respiration to the just,
 And vengeance to the wicked, at return
 Of him so lately promis'd to thy aid
 The Woman's seed, obscurely then foretold, 420
 Now ampler known thy Saviour and thy Lord,
 Last in the clouds from Heav'n to be reveal'd
 In glory of the Father, to dissolve

Satan with his perverted world, then raise
 From the conflagrant mass, purg'd and refin'd, 425
 New Heav'ns, new earth, ages of endless date
 Founded in righteousness and peace and love,
 To bring forth fruits, joy and eternal bliss.

He ended; and thus Adam last reply'd.
 *How soon hath thy prediction, Seer blest, 430
 Measur'd this transient world, the race of time
 Till time stand fix'd? Beyond is all abyss,
 Eternity, whose end no eye can reach.

Greatly instructed I shall hence depart,
 Greatly in peace of thought, and have my fill 435
 Of knowledge, what this vessel can contain;
 Beyond which was my folly to aspire.

Henceforth I learn, that to obey is best,
 And love with fear the only God, to walk
 As in his presence, ever to observe 440
 His providence, and on him sole depend,*

Merciful over all his works, with good
 Still overcoming evil, and by small
 Accomplishing great things, by things deem'd weak
 Subverting worldly strong, and worldly wise 445
 By simple meek; that suffering for truth's sake
 Is fortitude to highest victory;

Taught this by his example whom I now
 Acknowledge my Redeemer ever blest.

To whom thus also th' Angel last reply'd. 450
 *This having learn'd, thou hast attain'd the sum
 Of wisdom; hope no high'er, though all the stars
 Thou knew'st by name, and all th' ethereal pow'rs,
 All secrets of the deep, all nature's works,

Book XII. P A R A D I S E L O S T. 331

Or works of God in heav'n, air, earth, or sea, 455

And all the riches of this world enjoy'dst,

And all the rule, one empire ; only add.

Deeds to thy knowledge answerable, add faith,

Add virtue, patience, temperance, add love,

By name to come call'd charity, the soul 460

Of all the rest : then wilt thou not be loath

To leave this Paradise, but shalt possess

A Paradise within thee happier far.*

Let us descend now therefore from this top

Of speculation : for the hour precise 465

Exacts our parting hence ; and see the guards,

By me incamp'd on yonder hill, expect

Their motion, at whose front a flaming sword,

In signal of remove, waves fiercely round ;

We may no longer stay : go, waken Eve ; 470

Her also I with gentle dreams have calm'd

Portending good, and all her spirits compos'd

To meek submission : thou at season fit

Let her with thee partake what thou hast heard,

Chiefly what may concern her faith to know, 475

The great deliverance by her seed to come

(Even by the Woman's seed) on all mankind :

That ye may live, which will be many days,

Both in one faith unanimous, though sad,

With grief for evils past, yet much more chear'd 480

With meditation on the happy end.

He ended, and they both descend the hill ;

Descended, Adam to the bow'r where Eve

Lay sleeping ran before, but found her wak'd ; 485

And thus with words not sad she him receiv'd.

Whence thou return'ft, and whither went'ft, I know ;
 For God is alfo' in fleep, and dreams advife,
 Which he hath fent propitious, fome great good
 Prefaging, fince with forrow and heart's diftrefs 490
 Wearied I fell afleep : but now lead on ;
 In me is no delay ; with thee to go,
 Is to ftay here ; without thee here to ftay,
 Is to go hence unwilling ; thou to me
 Art all things under Heav'n, all places thou, 500
 Who for my wilful crime art banifh'd hence.
 This further confoiation yet fecure
 I carry hence ; though all by me is loft,
 Such favour I unworthy am vouchsaf'd,
 By me the promis'd Seed fhall all reftore. 505

So fpake our mother Eve, and Adam heard
 Well pleas'd, but answer'd not ; for now too nigh
 Th' Arch-Angel flood, and from the other hill
 To their fix'd ftation, all in bright array
 The Cherubim defcended ; on the ground 510
 Gliding meteorous, as evening mift
 Ris'n from a river o'er the marifh glides,
 And gathers ground faft at the fab'rer's heel
 Homeward returning. High in front advanc'd,
 The brandifh'd fword of God before them blaz'd 515
 And 'gan to parch that temp'rate chime ; whereat
 In either hand the haft'ning Angel caught
 Our ling'ring parents, and to the eastern gate
 Led them direct, and down the cliff as faft
 To the fubjected plain : then difappear'd. 520
 They looking back, all th' eastern fide beheld
 Of Paradife, fo late their happy feat,

Wav'd over by that flaming brand, the gate

With dreadful faces throng'd and fiery arms :

Some natural tears they dropt, but wip'd them soon; 525

The world was all before them, where to choose

Their place of rest, and providence their guide.





NOTES ON PARADISE LOST.

B O O K XII.

Ver. 35. *A gurge*.—A bubbling Spring. *Bitumen* is a kind of pitchy Substance. This Spring was black, like the Mouth of Hell.

Ver. 44. *A various Spirit*.—A Spirit varying the Sounds, by which they would express their Thoughts.

Ver. 65. *Liberty* is the *Twin Sister* of *Reason*, and cannot exist *divided* from her.

Ver. 131. *Sequent*.—Following.

Ver. 144. *Intrusion*.—Thrusting in.

Ver. 157. *The River-Dragon*.—*Pharoah*, so called in allusion to the *Crocodile*, which abounds in *Egypt*.
The allusion is taken from *Ezek.* 29. 1.

Ver. 181. *Grey*.—Cover'd with Clouds and Smoke,

Ver. 223. *Pravity*.—Depravity, wickedness.

Ver. 238. *Joshua* is the same Name with *Jesus*, i. e. *Saviour*.

Ver. 253. *All Prophecy*.—That is, all Prophets.

- Ver. 261. *Clouded*.—Covered with the Cloud.
 Ver. 266. *The popular Sin*.—The Sins of People.
 Ver. 305. *His capital Bruise*.—The Bruise upon his head.
 Ver. 322. *Appaid*.—Satisfied.
 Ver. 352. *Profluent Stream*.—Running water.
 Ver. 431. *Respiration*.—Refreshment, ease.
 Ver. 439. *Conflagrant*.—Burning.
 Ver. 520. *Meteorous*.—Like a meteor, or vapour.
 Ver. 529. *Subjected*.—Lying below.

F I N I S.





